A NEW
French GRAMMAR,
WHEREIN THE
DEFECTS of former GRAMMARS are supplied,
AND
Their ERRORS corrected;

For the USE of the
Young NOBILITY and GENTRY
OF
SCOTLAND.

By JAMES FREEBAIRN.

EDINBURGH,
Printed by ROBERT FREFBAIRN, His Majesty's Printer, and Sold by most of the BOOKSELLERS in Town and Country. MDCCXXXIV.



S^r. Alex^r. Macdonald Bar^t.

To the Right Honourable,

PATRICK LINDSAY

Lord Provoſt,

The Honourable

ALEXANDER WILSON,
JAMES SETON,
ALEXANDER LINDSAY,
SAMUEL WELSH,
} Bailies,

JAMES SIMPSON, Dean of Guild,
ALEXANDER BLACKWOOD, Treaſurer,
JOHN M'GILL, *Surgeon*, Deacon-Conveener,

AND

Remanent MEMBERS of the Town-Council *of* EDINBURGH.

My LORD and GENTLEMEN,

THO' I would lay aſide all Conſideration from *Duty*, yet *Gratitude* is, with me, a Motive ſtrong enough, for this Publick Acknowledgment of the Counte-

nance and Protection I receive from the *Guardians of the City's Liberties.*

My LORD,

SHOULD I attempt your *Private Character*, I could publiſh with *Great Truth*, what might paſs for the *groſſeſt Flattery*, in too many Addreſſes of this Kind. But I ſhall wave it at preſent, both out of Fear of offending your *Modeſty*, and from a Senſe of my Incapacity of ſetting off its Beauties, with that *Life* and *Vigour*, they ſhine in the *Original*. Only give me Leave to joyn in the Univerſal Applauſe,

YOU, GENTLEMEN of the COUNCIL,

Meet with, from your judicious Choice of a Perſon, to repreſent the

GOOD

GOOD TOWN; Whoſe *Signal Services* claim'd this Proof of your *Gratitude*, whoſe *Politeneſs* and *Humanity* gives him the *Favour* of the GREAT, and ſecures him the *Eſteem of ALL*. And, whoſe great Abilities, when He repreſents this CITY in the moſt Auguſt Aſſembly of *Britain*, will be conſpicuous in the Service of his *Country*, and reflect Honour on your Choice. I am,

My LORD,

And Honoured GENTLEMEN,

Your Moſt Humble,

AND

Moſt Obedient Servant,

JA. FREEBAIRN.

BRITISH MUSEUM
15 FEB 69

THE PREFACE.

THIS Performance, such as it is, is not usher'd into the World with a Preface, in Compliance with Custom: But, from a Necessity, I think, I ly under, of accounting to the Publick, why I attempted a New French GRAMMAR, after such Multitudes of that Kind have appear'd in Print. And above all, after the Publication of a late one in this Country, which the Author calls in the Title Page; The most Complete, Compendious, and Easy French Grammar.

I freely own, that had the Performance, in any Degree, answered the boasting of the Title Page, any new Attempt would have been presumptuous: but upon a narrow Examination, I found the Title a true Specimen of the Authors Modesty, and the rest of the Book of his, ... I leave it to others to fill up this Hiatus, as they find themselves in Humour after perusal of it. However, I'm credibly inform'd, he has at last abandon'd this most Complete, &c. Grammar, as an Avorton, as an untimely Birth, and as a fresh Instance of his bashful Disposition, is cooking up a New Ragout from Pere Buffier, and the Grammaire Generale et Raisonée; which last, he asserts, to be one of the best Grammars extant for the French. Tho' the World knows it was never design'd for that, or any other particular Language. For the first nam'd Gentle-

man, we are all ſenſible, how ſcurvily he has treated him in his firſt Performance: But perhaps, they now underſtand one another better.

But, as this Author has renounced his own Offſpring, as too uncomely to appear a Second Time, even with a new Dreſs; I ſhall drop him alſo, and give a ſhort Account of ſome Defects *and* Errors *in others, more Corrigible than he, which, I pretend to ſupply and correct. And Firſt,*

The Young Nobility *and* Gentry *of this* Part *of the* United Kingdom, *labour'd under an univerſal Want of, and for that Reaſon, there was an indiſpenſible* Neceſſity *for* Plain, Full, *and* Exact Rules for pronouncing the French; *thoſe in any Grammar printed in* England, *being calculated according to their Way of Accenting the Vowels, could be of no Uſe here, or were rather apt to miſlead us; ſince every Perſon is ſenſible of the wide Difference of their Manner from ours. This Want, I flatter my ſelf, I have ſupplied, and can produce ſufficient Vouchers for the Juſtneſs of my Rules, from the beſt Practice, and the moſt approven Grammarians.*

The Rules of true Spelling *and* Orthography *are laid down with greater Accuracy, than in any Grammar hitherto taught here. However, ſome may differ from me, in what I advance concerning the* Paſſive Participles, *becauſe the Sentiments of the Learned are divided as to ſome Points. Therefore, as I don't pretend to Infallibility, if I have err'd, I can plead in Excuſe, That the Secretary of the* Royal Academy *at* Paris, *whoſe Opinion I follow, has led me aſtray.*

Others may blame me, for placing this nice Part of the Grammar, ſo near the Beginning of it: But, if it is a Fault, it muſt be laid to my Predeceſſor's Charge, who have all agreed, that Articulation *and* Orthography *is the*

firſt

first Part of Grammar. And being confin'd to their Divi-ſion, I could not omit any Thing proper to be ſaid on that Article? Neither know I well, where to bring it in any where elſe, with any Method. However, as it is my Prac-tice *with my Claſſes, ſo I would adviſe other, after they are ſome-what Maſters of the* Rules *of* Pronunciation *and* Spelling, *and know a little of* Proſody, *to proceed directly to the* 3d *Part; and when they come to have* French *Exerciſes, they may ſtudy the nicer Parts of* Or-thography *along with the* Syntax.

The Articles *are ſet in a truer Light, their Nature and Uſe more fully explain'd; and by the Diſcovery of a* Midle Article, *an Infinite Number of* French *Expreſſions, re-duc'd to the common Rules of* Syntax. *Which could not for-merly be accounted for, but by a,* Je ne ſai comment, mais c'eſt l'Uſage de la Cour: Or, ainſi l'a voulu, la Pratique, *or, by a, Something underſtood. I call it a* Diſcovery, *becauſe none of our former Grammarians have taken the leaſt Notice of it; and even our Country-man, tho' he aſ-ſures us of his having perus'd* Pere Buffier, *from whom I own I had it, has paſs'd it over; or not thorowly under-ſtood it.*

Nothing proper to be known about Nouns *is omitted, their Declenſion is made eaſier, and more certain, by the Help of three* General Rules *when to* apply *the* Diffe-rent Articles. *The* Compariſons *are alſo treated in a Clear and Diſtinct Method; and a* Table *added for* di-ſtinguiſhing *the* Genders *of* Nouns *by their Terminati-ons, a Thing not hitherto attempted, in any* Grammar *taught in this Kingdom.*

I have treated of the Perſonal Pronouns *in a Method hitherto New, by diſtinguiſhing them into* Disjunctive *and* Conjunctive; *and, I think, I have Reaſon on my Side. For hardly can any two Parts of Speech differ more in*

their

their Function, Regimen, *and* Inflection, *than* Moi *and* Je, *and the other Disjoints do, from the Conjoints. For,* (1.) Moi, *&c. can never be the* Nominative *of a Verb, and* Je *always ſupplies the Place of a Noun Subſtantive as Nominative of the Verb. We can't ſay,* Moi parle, Toi parles, Lui parle; *but,* Je parle, Tu parles, Il parle. (2.) Moi *may be us'd after a Verb, and even without one, which* Je *can't be, except in Interrogations; but then it is joyn'd to the Verb by a* Hyphen, *or Mark of Union, to denote its Relation to the Verb. Thus we may ſay,* c'eſt Moi, Toi, Lui, *and* Moi! point du tout, *but* c'eſt Je, Tu, Il, *or* Je, point du tout, *can't be ſaid.* (3.) Moi, *&c. never change their Terminations in their Oblique Caſes; whereas,* Je *has* me, Tu te, Il lui *or* le, *in their Datives and Accuſatives; and beſides, none of the Conjuncts have any Genitives.* Laſtly, *The Conjoints* Je, &c. *are only govern'd by Verbs, and the Disjoints are govern'd by Prepoſitions as Nouns. This Diſtinction of the Perſonal Pronouns, tho' of conſiderable Importance, has been altogether* overlook'd *by former* Grammarians.

I have inſiſted, at more Length, on the Nature *of* Verbs, *explain'd all the Different Kinds, and rang'd their Times or Tenſes under their proper Moods: Whereas, they lay ſcatter'd formerly, without any* Order, *or* Propriety. *I have, in* Page 106, *and* 112. *of my* Grammar, *aſſign'd Reaſons for the Tranſpoſitions I have made, and for reſtoring the Gerunds, quite neglected by our Grammarians; and, I am hopeful, after Reflection, they will be found convincing, to unprejudic'd Minds.*

There is yet another Change I have made in the Tenſes of Verbs in my Grammar, *which I beg Leave to Account for here; becauſe, being New, if not ſet in a true Light, it might ſtartle the Minds of ſome well-meaning Perſons, and give others Occaſion to find Fault; tho', at the ſame Time, their* Criticiſms *would only betray their own* Ignorance.

It

It will be obſerv'd, That all along in the Inflections of Verbs, I uſe the Alternatives J'aurois, *or* J'euſſe, *and* Je ſerois, *or* Je fuſſe, *with the Participle of the Verb, to expreſs the* Conditional Paſt: *and well foreſee, it will be objected againſt me, That by Mr.* Boyer's *Syſtem, and his* Copier *in all his* Blunders, Euſſe *and* Fuſſe *are the Second; or, according to better Syſtems, the only,* Imperfect *of the* Conjunctive Mood; *and, for that Reaſon, can never come into any Tenſe of the* Indicative. *I own, the* Orthography *is the ſame in both, when I uſe them either to expreſs the* Conditional Paſt, *or the* Imperfect *of the* Conjunctive Mood; *but the Senſe and Meaning very different. And yet no Argument can be drawn, why they may not be uſed as Tenſes of the* Indicative, *from a Reſemblance of* Orthography; *becauſe, by the ſame Reaſon, the* Imperative Mood *muſt be laid aſide, becauſe of its perfect Reſemblance with the* Preſent *of the* Indicative, *except in the Third Perſon Singular of the three laſt Conjugations, and a few Irregular Verbs. So muſt either the* Preſent, *or* Imperfect *of the* Conjunctive Mood *of the* Second Conjugation, *which are the ſame, except in the Third Perſon Singular; and either the Third Perſon Singular, of the Imperative, or of the Preſent of the Conjunctive, being perfectly the ſame in all Verbs, muſt have the ſame Fate; tho' their* Senſe *and* Signification *be vaſtly* different.

But to come more Cloſe, they muſt, on many Occaſions, *be Tenſes of the* Indicative, *as well as of the* Conjunctive Mood; *for theſe Reaſons,* (1.) *They are uſed in* Interrogations *as well as* Aurois *or* Serois, *and in no other* Mood *can we Interrogate; but in the* Indicative. (2.) *They are often imploy'd* without *any* Conjunction, *and the* Conjunctive Mood *is never uſed without a* Conjunction *going before it.* (3.) *They are frequently* govern'd *by* Conjunctions *that govern the* Indicative *only, ſuch as* Comme, ſi, Quand, Quand-même, *&c.*

I could

I could vouch Thouſands of Authorities for Proof of what I affirm; but, am fully perſwaded, that a little Reading and Reflection muſt convince every one, That Euſſe *and* Fuſſe *are, on many Occaſions,* Tenſes *of the* Indicative, *as well as of the* Conjunctive; *and that nothing has created a Prejudice to the contrary, but giving too implicite Credit to* blind Guides.

I had once ſome Thoughts, after the Example of ſome Grammarians, *to have* increas'd *the Number of* Regular Conjugations, *in order to have* diminiſh'd *that of* Irregular Verbs, *ſo much complain'd of: But, upon ſerious Reflection, I found it could not be done with any Regularity: Becauſe there being but* four different Terminations *of the* Infinitives *of all* French *Verbs, there can be but* as many *regular Conjugations. However, I think I have attain'd the ſame End, in a more natural Method,* viz. *When any Number of Verbs of the ſame* Termination *obſerve one and the ſame* Rule *in their* Inflections, *and yet do not follow the* General Rule *of that Conjugation, I range them as ſo many* Differences *from the General Rule. And as there are many of that Kind in the* ſecond *and* fourth *Conjugations, the Number of Irregulars is greatly diminiſh'd. I have alſo render'd the* Conjugation *of all Verbs* Eaſy, *by ſetting down the* Primitive Tenſes *of all of them, and Teaching,* Page 99, &c. *how to form the others from them. Inſomuch, That a Perſon of* tolerable Memory *and* Reflection *may* learn, *in* one Day, *how to* conjugate *any* French *Verb, whether Regular or Irregular.*

I ſhall not weary the Readers Patience *with a Detail of the* Improvements *I pretend to have made, on the* Participles, Adverbs, Prepoſitions, *and* Conjunctions; *I ſhall only intreat the Favour, That he* compare *what I have ſaid on theſe, as well as on the other Parts of Speech, with what other* Grammarians *have ſaid on the ſame Subjects; and then give the Preference to the moſt deſerving.*

ving. At the same Time assuring him, That if I be found Defective, Obscure, or Erroneous, on any Article, I shall no sooner be convinc'd of either, than I shall endeavour to amend them, and to make my Acknowledgments to the Person who does me the friendly Office.

It now remains that I should Account why, I have not swell'd my Grammar, with Vocables and Phrases, after the Practice of almost all my Brethren; and I answer in the first Place, That, in my humble Opinion, this Practice was introduc'd at first, and since continu'd, rather with a View to the Booksellers Profit, than to any real Advantage to Beginners. For scarce is there one in Twenty, that does not weary, in a very short Time, of these dry Repetitions. And besides, all the Vocabularies I have seen, are, and must be, incomplete; unless a Dictionary of Nouns and Verbs was added to a Grammar. For the other Parts of Speech, such as Articles, Pronouns, Adverbs, Prepositions, Conjunctions and Interjections, they are at full Length in mine; being the most useful, as occurring more frequently in Discourse than the Nouns and Verbs, which may be learn'd with much more Pleasure, as they are met with in the Course of their reading; and stand connected with other Members of Discourse, in order to form Sentences, than can be done when single, even in the best dispos'd Vocabulary. As to Phrases, I dare affirm, there are as many dispers'd through mine, as are in any other Grammar, and digested after a more rational Manner, since there are Reasons assign'd why, every Branch of the Sentence, possesses such and such a Place; whereas, in other Grammars, one may mandate the Whole, without being able to account for, the Disposition of one of them. However, when I inform my Readers of the Method I use in teaching, it will stifle any Objection of this Kind, which is, that once or twice a Week, I propose so many Verbs, from which the Students must form as my Sentences as they can; varying the Verbs through all their Moods, Tenses,

ſes, Perſons, and Numbers; and when corrected, are tranſcribed into a Book, with the Engliſh in the oppoſite Column: And ſo by this Method, in a ſhort Time, they come to be Maſters of a more complete and more natural Phraſeology, than is to be met with in any Grammar. In the End, I have added ſome Directions about Stile, and given a ſhort Hint of the Nature, and different Kinds of Eloquence, abridg'd from Pere Buffier, and Mr. Rollin, which will not only ſerve for their Improvement in reading the French, but alſo inform them, of the Defects and Qualities of Stile, and when to uſe the different Kinds of Eloquence, with Propriety and Succeſs on any Occaſion, and in any Language whatever.

But, after all, I'm perſuaded, That this Performance, however ſincerely intended for the Improvement of Youth, in the Way that I profeſs, will not eſcape the Cenſure of Two Sorts of Men. Of the firſt Kind, are many of thoſe, who no ſooner think themſelves Maſters of Moliere, only in the Explanatory Way, than they commence Maitres de Langue, and flatter ſome ignorant or over frugal Parents, into a loſs of their Childrens Time and Improvement, becauſe indeed they teach for a Triſle. The ſame Moliere in his Miſanthrope has deſcrib'd the other Set of Folks in ſo Lively Characters, that I ſhall only tranſcribe his Words.

Depuis que dans la tête, il s'eſt mis d'être habille,
Rien ne touche ſon gout, tant il eſt difficile;
Il veut voir des defauts, à tout ce qu'on écrit,
Et penſe que louer, n'eſt pas d'un Bel Eſprit;
Que c'eſt être ſavant, que trouver à redire;
Qu'il n'appartient qu'aux Sots, d'admirer, et de rire,
Et qu'en n'approuvant rien des Ouvrages du Tems,
Il ſe met au deſſus de tous les autres Gens.

But,

But, if I be so happy as to meet with the Approbation of the Judicious *and* Unprejudic'd *Part of Mankind, the Censure of others will affect me as little, as their Incense would puff me up.*



Notwith

Notwithstanding the Care I took in correcting the Press, some literal Errors have escap'd my Observation, which tho' not material, may be thus corrected.

PAge 12. Line 11. read *Indemnité.* Ibid. l. penult, r. *ennuyer.* P. 73. l. 23. r. *genereuſement.* P. 79. l. 9, 10, 11. r. *Hopitaux.* P. 84. r. have no Plurals. P. 93. laſt Line r. *J'aime, J'aimai.* P. 97. r. *Revêtir.* P. 107. l. 5. r. *avions.* P. 110. l. 30. r. *J'aurois.* P. 116. l. 3. r. *été.* P. 117. l. 9. r. *tiennent.* P. 124. laſt l. r. *craindrois,* and *aurois.* P. 127. l. 6. r. *Jeus.* P. 144. r. *aie.* P. 165. l. 9. r. *jeune.* P. 171. l. 13. r. *auprés* P. 174. l. 8. r. *mal.* P. 184. l. 5. r. *ſuppoſé.* P. 189. l. 20. r. *Mathematiques.* P. 197. l. 22. r. employ'd. P. 206. l. 17. r. *Maiſon.* P. 212. l. 27. r. is to be. P. 227. l. 20. r. Conjunctives.

A NEW *French* GRAMMAR.

PART I.

GRAMMAR is the Art of speaking and writing well in any Language; so called from a *Greek* Word, which signifies a *Letter*: Because Grammar treats of *Letters*, which are the Foundation of human *Speech*, which consists of *Sentences* or *Phrases*; these of *Words*, Words of *Syllables*, and these again of *Letters*; which have been instituted to represent *Sounds*, Sounds to distinguish Syllables, Syllables to form Words, Words to name *Things*, their Actions, Passions, Qualities and Circumstances; Phrases to express our Thoughts, and Speech to represent them, with Order and Reasoning; which is perform'd two Ways, either with the *Mouth* by Pronunciation, or by *Writing*.

Grammar is divided into Four principal Parts, *viz.* 1. ARTICULATION and ORTHOGRAPHY or SPELLING. 2. PROSODY or QUANTITY. 3. ANALOGY taken in that Sense as it treats of all the *Words* of a Language, and distributes them into certain *Classes* or *Ranks*, commonly call'd *Parts of Speech*. And 4. SYNTAX, which treats of the due *ordering* and *ranging* of the several *Parts of Speech* towards the regular Composition of *Sentences* or *Phrases*.

ARTICULATION is that Part of Grammar which treats of *Sounds*, and ORTHOGRAPHY or Spelling teaches to *express* or *represent* these *Sounds* by *Characters* commonly call'd *Letters*:

Therefore since Letters express Sounds, tho' differing from one another, yet all simple, our first Chapter shall treat of the true manner of pronouncing and expressing these Sounds.

CHAP I. *Of Pronunciation.*

THere are Twenty five Letters in the *French* Language, to wit, A a, B b, C c, D d, E e, F f, G g, H h, I i j, K k, L l, M m, N n, O o, P p, Q q, R r, S ſ s, T t, U u, V v, X x, Y y, Z z.

Of these Letters Six are *Vowels*, to wit, A, E, I, O, U and Y, and the rest are *Consonants*, Four of which are called *Liquids*.

A Vow-

BRITISH MUSEUM 15 69 FEB

A Vowel forms a Sound by it ſelf, as A, but a Conſonant can't form a Sound, by it ſelf, without the Help of a Vowel, as B, and L, which can't be pronounced without the Sound of ſome of the Vowels, before or after them.

Two or more Vowels join'd together are cal-ed a *Diphthong*; when they form but one Sound, they are called Improper, when they form two diſtinct Sounds, they are called Proper.

A *Naſal Sound* is where a Part of the Breath paſſeth thro' the Noſtrils; thus every Vowel has its naſal Sound when join'd to M, or N. under ſome Exceptions which ſhall be taken Notice of in the following Rules. The Naſals ſound *Ang, eng, ing, ong, ung*: The Naſal of *a*, and *e* Feminine are the ſame, they are diſtinguiſh'd in the Rules by Letters in a different Character.

A Conſonant is ſaid to be *liquified*, when its ordinary Sound is ſoftened; thus, G and L are ſoftened in theſe Words of our own Language, *Reign, Sign, Mile, Stile*, from their ordinary Sound in other Words, ſuch as *Magnify, Signify, Mill, Fill*: Obſerve therefore, That G has always this liquid Sound before *M*, or *N*; and L after *ai, ei, œi, ui*, when it is pronounced.

When H is ſounded in the Beginning of a Word, it is ſaid to be *aſpirated*, that is, the Breath is forcibly preſs'd from the Lungs, in order to give it a Sound with the following Vowel.

These Things being premis'd, I proceed next to give Rules for the true Pronunciation of each Letter, according as they ſtand in the Alphabet, firſt by themſelves ſingly, and next as they happen to be join'd in Syllables, with other Vowels and Conſonants: Thus,

A.

1. A being the only Vowel of a Syllable ſounds like A in the *Engliſh* Words, *Bal*, *War*.

2. Two A's meeting together, ſound as one long A.

3. Am and an, ſound *an* before a Conſonant, or in the End of a Word, but before a Vowel, they ſound as in *Engliſh*.

4. Ai ſounds E open in the Beginning and Middle of Words, except *faiſon*, *faites*, and the Imperfect of the Verb *Faire*, where it ſounds E Feminine. In the End of a Word it ſounds E Maſculine, except *Vrai*, *Eſſai*, *Delai*, and when follow'd by E, S, or X, it ſounds E open.

5. When L follows Ai, A keeps its proper Sound, the I ſerving only to mark that L muſt be liquified; the ſame Thing may be ſaid of Ei follow'd by L.

6. Aim and Ain final Sound Eing.

7. Ao ſounds O, except in *Paon*, *a Peacock*, *Faon*, *a Fawn* or *young Deer*, *Laon*, *a City in* France, where O is mute.

8. A is mute in Aou.

9. Au ſounds O.

10. Y after A and before a Vowel ſounds as Y in the *Engliſh* Word *you*, before a Conſonant it ſupplies the Place of two Is, the firſt of which forms the Diphthong Ai, and the latter makes another Syllable with the following Conſonant.

B.

B ſounds as in *Engliſh*, except before S or T, when it ſounds P.

C.

1. Ca, Ce, Ci, Co, Cu ſound Ka, Se, Si, Ko, Ku.

2. C with a Cerilla under it, thus (ç) ſounds S.

3. Ch before a Vowel ſounds Sh, except in *Archiepiſcopal*, *Bacchus*, *Cherſoneſe*, *Chiromancie*, *Chaeur*, *Chariſte*, *Echo*, and a few Words deriv'd from the *Greek*, where it ſounds K, yet *Anchiſe*, *Achille*, *Chirurgien*, follow the general Rule.

4. Ch, before a Conſonant, ſounds K.

5. When two C's meet together in the ſame Word before E or I, the firſt ſounds K, the laſt S; before A, O, or U, both ſound K.

6. C is pronounced in *Roc*, *Sac*, *Bec*, and in *Aſpect*, *Reſpect*, *Suſpect*, *Circonſpect*, without the T, in *Fact*, *Enact*, *Correct*, *Direct*, both C and T are pronounced; in *Almanac*, *Arſenac*, *Artimic*, *Cotignac*, *Marc*, *Clerc*, *Porc*, *Porc-epic*, *Eſtomac*, *Tabac*, *Broc*, *Avec*, and when C is preceded by a

Naſal N, ſuch as, *Banc, Donc, Jonc,* C is not pronounc'd, if a Vowel does not follow, or in repeating of Verſe.

7. C and T are mute in *Contract.*

8. C ſounds like G, in *Second, Secret,* and their Derivatives.

D.

D ſounds as in *Engliſh,* only it is mute in the End of a Word before a Conſonant, but ſounds T before a Vowel.

E.

There are Four Sorts of E's in *French,* the *Feminine,* or *mute* E, which produces the ſmalleſt Sound the Human Voice is capable of, ſuch a Sound as it has in the *Engliſh* Words, *Face, Place, Made.*

The *Maſculine* or *Cloſs* E, which ſounds like *Y* in the Words, *Bounty, Haſty,* or as we pronounce theſe Conſonants, B, C, D, and is diſtinguiſh'd by an acute Accent, thus (é).

The open E, which ſounds like *A in Fate, Mate,* or as *EA,* in *Great, Weak,* and is diſtinguiſhed by a grave Accent, thus (è), or by a Circumflex, thus (ê), but when follow'd by a double or final Conſonant that is pronounced, it has no Accent, ſuch as L, M, N, or R.

The very open E is only to be met with in the Syllables *em* and *en,* follow'd by a Conſonant, when they ſound *ang,* and in the Particle *En,* which ſounds an, before a Vowel.

In order to diſtinguiſh the Four different Sounds of the E, obſerve theſe Rules;

1. E is mute in the End of Words, when the following Word begins with a Vowel.

2. It is not pronounced in the Futures, and Uncertain Tenſes of Verbs in *ier*.

3. It is ſuppreſt both in Pronunciation and Writing, in the End of Monoſyllables, before Vowels, or an H mute, and ſupplied by an Apoſtrophe, thus (').

4. It is mute when C or G go before, and A or O follow in the ſame Word.

5. It is mute after another Vowel in the End of a Word, when not accented.

6. It is mute in the ſame Syllable with *a*, *o*, or *u*.

7. E or ES are mute in the End of Words, when there is no Accent above the E.

Obſerve, That the mute E of the laſt Syllable of the third Perſon plural of Verbs is reckon'd final, becauſe *nt* which follow, ſerve only to mark the Plural, and when E or ES are mute, they make the preceeding Vowel or Conſonant to be fully pronounc'd.

1. E is always pronounc'd cloſe, when being the laſt Vowel of a Word, it is mark'd with an acute Accent, thus (é), and ſo in their Plurals.

2. In the ſecond Perſon plural, and Participles of Verbs, and in theſe Words, *Aſſez* and *Nez*,

Nez, upon which it muſt be remembred, that *ez* marks the ſame Sound that *es*.

3. It is always cloſe, when in the Middle of a Word, it is follow'd by another Vowel, with which it does not form the ſame Syllable.

4 It is cloſe in the Infinitives of Verbs, and in Nouns ending in *er*, when the R is not pronounced.

1. It is a little open, when it is the only Vowel of the penult Syllable of Words, ending with an E mute.

2. It is ſomewhat open before two Conſonants, or *x* which is reckon'd equivalent, and in *De* and *Re* follow'd by a Conſonant, except *Decret*, *Regret*, *Feſſer*, *Secret*, *Veſſie*, *Deſir*, *Demi*, *Devoir*, *Denier*, *Devin*, *Deviner*, *Receveir*, *Reprendre*, *Redire*, when *ſs* follows *Re*, and the *e* in the Penults of Verbs in *er*, in all which the E is *Feminine*.

3. It is open in the End of Words, when follow'd by R or any other Conſonant that is pronounced.

4. It is open in all Syllables, where L or R are pronounced, or when either are follow'd by another Conſonant, or *ſs* without *Re* before it.

5. E is open in all long Finals, where it was open in the *Singular*, in Nouns in *cès* and *rès*, in the Adverb *Très*, and in the Prepoſitions *Dès* and *Près*.

6. E is open before a final *m* or *n*.

7. E

7. E is very open, and ſounds *ang* before *m* or *n*, followed by any other Conſonant, except *n*, where *n* keeps its natural Sound, yet *ennui*, *ennuyer* ſound *ang*, and the Particle *En* ſounds an before a Vowel.

8. If *I* goes before *En* it ſounds *eng*, except another *n* follows, and then it has its natural Sound, yet theſe Words *Audience*, *Conſcience*, *Experience*, *Orient*, *Patience*, and *Science* ſound *ang* according to the General Rule.

N. B. That E before M or N is never join'd with them in the ſame Syllable, when another E, or any other Vowel, follows any of theſe Conſonants.

9. Eau ſounds O.

10. Eil ſounds E and L liquify'd.

11. Ein follow'd by a Conſonant or Final ſounds *eing*, follow'd by a Vowel ſounds *èn*.

F.

F is pronounc'd in the End of Words, except in *Clef*, *Eteuf*, *Baillif*; and in *Beuf*, *Cerf*, *Nerf*, *Oeuf*, *Neuf* (New) follow'd by a Conſonant; and if they are not the laſt Word of a Sentence. F is never pronounced in their Plurals.

F in *Neuf* (Nine) is mute before a Conſonant, ſounds V before a Vowel, and F in the End of a Phraſe.

F in *Chef* is always pronounced, but in *Chef d'oeuvre*.

G.

1. G is pronounced ſoftly in the Beginning, Middle, and End of Words, when E or I follows; but it ſounds ſtrong when A, O, or U follow it.

2. When GU is followed by another Vowel U is not pronounc'd; but the Sound of the G falls upon the other Vowel, except *Guiſe* and *Guide* proper Names; *Aiguille*, *Aiguiſer*, and their Derivatives; with *Cigue*, *Ambigue*, *Contigue*, and *Ambiguité*.

3. G is liquified before M or N: If E go before G, it has ſomething of the Sound of I. People about Court liquify the G in *Agneau*; the Men of Learning do not.

4. G is not pronounced in *Vingt*, *Doigt*, *Legs*, with their Derivatives.

H.

H is no Letter, but ſerves ſometimes for an Aſperation, and then ſupplies the Place of a Conſonant. To find out when it is aſpirated, and when not, the Dictionary muſt be conſulted, where the aſpirated H is mark'd with an Aſteriſm, thus *. But obſerve, it is never aſpirated in the Middle of a Word; and in ſome if follow'd by I, the Vowel I is changed into J Conſonant.

I.

1. J Conſonant is ſounded like a ſoft G.

2. The Vowel I ſounds as two E's in *Keep*, *Weep*, *Sleep*.

I join'd

3. I join'd to M or N in the Middle or End of a Word ſounds *eing*, as they do in the Beginning, follow'd by any other Conſonants but another M or N, where both are pronounced with their natural Sound.

4. I is loſt in *ail*, *eil*, *euil*, for it only marks that the *L* is liquified.

5. I before a Vowel ſounds like *Y* in *you*.

5. Ieu ſounds *Yu*.

L.

1. L is ſounded in Monoſyllables, except in *Cul*, *Fils*, *Pouls*, *Gril* and *Quel* before a Conſonant; it is alſo mute in *Quelque*, *Quelqu'un*, *Quelconque*.

2. L in the Pronoun *Il* is pronounced before a Verb beginning with a Vowel, but never after a Verb, tho' a Vowel ſhould follow, and never in its Plural.

3. L ſounds U in theſe Words, *Col*, *Mol*, *Fol*, *Sol*, *Licol*, yet we ſay *Col de Tende*.

4. The double *ll* ſounds ſingle, except in the Beginning of a Word where both are ſounded; and when *I* goes before, where they are liquified: Except in the following Words, where they ſound ſingle, *Argille*, *Achille*, *Diſtille*, *Imbecille*, *Idille*, *Tranquille*, *Ville*, *Pupille*, *Sillabe*, *Mille*, and its Derivatives.

5. L final is ſounded in Words of two or more Syllables, after A, E, O, au, eu, ou, except *Saoul*.

6. It is liquified in *Ail*, *Eil*, *Euil*, *Ouil*; and in *Babil*, *Peril*, *Avril*, *Breſil* a Country, *Mil* a Grain, and *Gentilhomme*; but it is Mute in *Chenil*, *Baril*, *Fuſil*, *Sourcil*, and in *Gentilſhommes*.

M.

1. M keeps its Sound when a Vowel follows, and when followed by another M; in Words Beginning with *Imm*, both are ſounded.

2. When followed by N it ſounds N, except *Imdemnité*, *Inſomnie*, *Hymne*, *Amniſtie*, *Calomnie*, and its Derivatives, when it keeps its proper Sound.

3. It has a Naſal Sound in the End of Words, except when E goes before it.

N.

1. N keeps its Natural Sound when it is the firſt Letter of a Syllable, between two Vowels in the ſame Word, when preceded by another Conſonant; or when A, O, or I, go before two N's.

2. It keeps its Sound in Foreign Words, or when N Penult is followed by a Feminine E, or when a Vowel follows the Final N.

3. En follow'd by any other Conſonant except N ſounds *ang*, but in the third Perſon plural of Verbs it is mute.

4. It ſounds èn when follow'd by another N, except in *Ennui*, *bennuir*, *nenni* which ſound *ang*.

5. It ſounds *en* when *I* goes before *en*; but *Patient*, *Orient*, &c. ſound *an*.

O.

1. O keeps its proper Sound before all Conſonants.

2. Oe is an Improper Diphthong, and ſounds E, except in *Moelle*, *Poelle*, which ſound *Moille*, *Poille*.

3. Oei and Oeu are alſo Improper, and ſound as *eu* in *Feu*.

4. Oi and Oy are Proper Diphthongs before *ant*, *en*, *L* and *N*.

5. They have the Sound of O and è in Monoſyllables, except *Droit* adjective, *Froid*, *Roid*, *Croire*, *Je Crois*, &c. *Sois*, *Je Sois*, &c. but theſe Exceptions only take Place in familiar Diſcourſe; in continued or declamatory Diſcourſes, they ſound as others.

6. It has the ſame Sound in Nouns and Verbs ending in *Oir* and *Oire*.

7. It is ſometimes a true and ſometimes a falſe Diphthong before *ons* and *tz*.

8. It is a falſe Diphthong, and ſounds like è in Verbs ending in *Oitre*, and in the Imperfects and Uncertain Tenſes of all Verbs.

9. It is alſo falſe and ſounds è in *Adroit*, *Endroit*, *Etroit*, *Foible*, and its Derivatives; and in ſome Names of Nations, as *Ecoſſois*, *Anglois*, *François*, *Irlandois*, *Hollandois*, *Polonois*; but *Suedois*,

Suedois, *Danois*, *Hongrois*, *Siamois*, *Beaujolois*, *Gaulois*, *Bavarois* ſound Oè.

10 Ou ſounds as we ſound our Vowel U.

P.

1. P keeps its proper Sound in *Cap*, *Rapt*, before a Vowel in the ſame Word and another *p*; and in *Trop* if the next Word begin with a Vowel.

2. It is mute in *Drap*, *Beaucoup*, *Camp*, *Champ*, *Corps*, *Compte*, *Compter*, *Pſeaume*, *Ptiſane*, *Ptiſie*, *Redempteur*; but it is ſounded in *Baptiſmal*, *Septuagenaire*, *Septuageſime*, *Septentrion*, *Pſalmiſt*, *Pſautier*, *Pſalmodier*, *Pſalterion*.

3. It is now no more written in *Batême*, *Tems*, *Promt*, *Exemt*, *Noces*, *Neveu*, *Niece*, *Conte* and *Conter* for *Compte* and *Compter*.

4. Ph ſounds as F.

Q.

1. Q ſounds like K in *Coq* and in *Cinq* before a Vowel, but it is mute before a Conſonant, as it is always in *Laqs*; in all other Caſes it is follow'd by U, which both together form the only ſimple Sound of a K.

2. But in *Equeſtre*, *Equiangle*, *Quinquageſime*, and their Drivatives, pronounce *Ecueſtre*, &c. in *Aquatique*, *Quadragenaire*, *Quadrageſime*, *Quadrateur*, *Equateur*, pronounce *Akouatick*, &c.

R.

1. R is pronounced in the End of all Monoſyllables except in *Sur*, when its Regimen begins with a Conſonant.

2. It is pronounced in Words ending in *Oir* and *Eur*, except in familiar Diſcourſe, when the R in Adjectives in *Eur*, and in Nouns in *Oir* is often neglected; but it is never pronounced in *Monſieur* and *Meſſieurs*.

3. It is pronounced in Words in *er*, where the *E* is open.

4. It is pronounced in *Notre* and *Votre* before a Vowel, when ſpeaking to GOD ALMIGHTY, a Prince, or a very great Perſon, when they have the Article before them, or are the laſt Word of a Sentence; but in no other Caſe before a Conſonant, nor the R in *Quatre* in that Caſe.

5. R is mute in Infinitives in *er* and *ir*, and in Nouns in *ier* and *er* where the E is Maſculine, as well in the Plural as in the Singular.

6. It is mute in Infinitives imployed as Nouns, and in *Plaiſir*, and *Loiſir*, but theſe R's are pronounced before Vowels in continued Diſcourſes.

S.

1. S keeps its Sound in the Beginning and Middle of Words when it is between two Vowels, if *de*, *pre*, *ra*, *re* go before, and to expreſs

expreſs the Sound of S two S's are often put, tho' they have only the Sound of one.

2. It ſounds like Z between two Vowels, and after *dans*, *ſans*, *trans*, followed by a Vowel; and in *nous*, *vous*, *ils*, *elles*, before a Verb beginning with a Vowel, and before the Particles *En* and *Y*.

3. S final keeps its Sound in *As*, a Term at Cards, in *Aloes*, and in other naturaliz'd Words, as *Agnus*, *Bolus*, *Calus*, *Rebus*, *Sinus*; in all other Caſes it is not pronounced before Conſonants, and may be omitted before a Vowel, as it is always in *Paradis*.

T.

1. T keeps its Sound in the Tenſes of Verbs, in Nouns when *tion* follow *x* or *ſ*, when *tien* has the Sound of *E* Naſal, and in Nouns ending in *tie* and *tié*, except *Primatie*, *Prophetie*, *Minutie*, and in ſome Names of Countries, as *Dalmatie*, *Galatie*, or Derivaties from the *Greek*, as *Ariſtocratie*, when it Sounds *S*, as does *ti* before *A*, *E*, or *O* not being in the Beginning of a Word.

2. It is mute in *Affect*, *Aſpect*, *Reſpect*, *Suſpect*, and in *Effect*, and the Conjunction *Et*, even tho' a Vowel ſhould follow; both the T and S are mute in *Quatre-vingts & un*, *Quatre-vingts deux*.

3. But it is always pronounced in *brut*, *fat*, *zenit*, *placet*, *exact*, *correct*, *direct*, *rapt*, *echec & mat*, *L'eſt*, *vent*, *d'eſt*, *oueſt*, *vingt & un*, *vingt*

vingt deux, ſoit, cet, ſept, huit, when they have no Subſtantives, or if it begin with a Vowel.

4. In all other Caſes it is indifferent to pronounce the final T, or not, before Words beginning with a Vowel.

U.

1. U ſounds in *French* as we do it in the Words *Brute, Mute.*

2. In foreign Words naturaliz'd it ſounds a Nasal O.

3. *Ueil* is only to be met with before a liquid L, and then Sounds as *eu* and the liquid L.

4. Obſerve in the Letters G and Q when it is, and when not ſounded.

X.

1. X has three different Sounds beſides that of Z, to wit, of *ks, gz,* and *ſs*: It ſounds *ks* in the Beginning of a Word before a Conſonant, and in Words deriv'd from the *Greek*, except before *ce* and *ci* where it ſounds K, and before *co, cu,* ſounds S.

2. In Words taken from the *Latin*, and betwixt two Vowels, it ſounds *gz.*

3. In *Soixante, Bruxelles*, and *Auxerre* it ſounds *ſs.*

4. In *Aux*, and in Adjectives ending in *x*, the *x* is pronounced before their Subſtantives beginning with a Vowel, or *H* mute, like an *z.*

5. X final is not pronounc'd in *Chaux, Choix, Faux, Toux, Poux, Crucifix, Salcifix*, nor in the

End of a Word before a Conſonant, or even in the End of a Sentence, except *Dix* and *Six*.

6. X in *Dix* and *Six* has theſe three Pronunciations. (1.) It is mute before their Subſtantives beginning with a Conſonant. (2.) The X ſounds Z before a Vowel in their Compounds, and in *dix huit*, *dix neuf*. (3.) In all other Caſes it ſounds S, but in *dix ſept* it ſounds *ſs*.

Y.

Y ſounds as the Vowel *I* before a Conſonant, before a Vowel like *Y* in *You*.

Z.

Z keeps its proper Sound before a Vowel, and is mute in the End of Words, except in *Chez elle*, *Chez eux*, *Chez elles*, or in the Imperative before *en* and *y*.

General RULES.

1. Double Conſonants are pronounc'd as ſingle, except, (1.) In Words beginning with *Imm*, or *Ill*. (2.) In Foreign proper Names. (3.) In Futures, and Uncertain Tenſes of Verbs in *ir*. And, (4.) Where two *c's*, or two *g's*, go before E or I.

2. Final Conſonants are pronounced when placed immediately before their Conjuncts, beginning with a Vowel, or H mute, *viz.* the Adjective before its Subſtantive; the Adverb, or Prepoſition, before its Regimen; the Pronoun before its Verb.

3. Finals

3. Finals of proper Names are pronounced, if it be not an S preceded by a Mute E or an I; or if a Nasal Vowel goes not before.

4. If a Word end with two or more Consonants, the first only is pronounc'd, and often none at all, especially Words ending in *ds*, *ps*, *rs*, *ft*, and *ts*.

5. A great many final Consonants may, and should be pronounc'd in declamatory Discourses, or in repeating of Verses, which are not pronounc'd in familiar Discourse.

CHAP. II. *Of Orthography.*

Of the French *Way of Spelling.*

WOrds can't be rightly or easily pronounc'd, unless each Syllable of which they consist be distinctly pronounc'd; nor can any Syllable be rightly pronounced, or Quantity throughly understood, except one knows how to distinguish them; in order to which, observe the following Rules.

But previously you must observe, That by a Syllable is meant one, or several Letters that make one complete and distinct Sound, whether they make a whole Word; as *Y*, there; *Bon*, good; or a Part of it only; as *Plaisant*, pleasant.

Rule 1. A Consonant or Liquid between two Vowels begins the later Syllable, as *Fa-ce, Plai-sant Poi-le, A-mi, Moi-neau, Pa-rent.*

2. A Consonant with a Liquid betwixt two Vowels, both begin the later Syllable; as *Fa-ble, Pei-gne, Qua-tre.*

3. Y before a Vowel not final begins the Syllable, as does a Vowel marked with two Points; as *Vo-yage, Vo-yons, Pi-to-yable, Ecu-yer, Cro-yez, Alo-ës, Isra-ël, ha-ïr, Sa-ül, Pi-ri-tho-üs.*

4. If three Vowels meet together in a Word, whereof two make an improper Diphthong, the Diphthong makes a different Syllable from the Vowel; as *Plai-e, Cru-au-té, Veu-e, Bleu-a-tre, Dou-a-ne, Jou-e, Jou-is-sance.* The rest agree with the *English.*

Words of one Syllable.

Mout, beau, ciel, Dieu, Eau, feu, gueux, jeu, lieu, mail, noeud, oeil, Peau, quart, rien, seuil, tien, voeu, yeux, zain.

Words of two Syllables.

A-yons, ar-me, bouil-lant, crai-e, de-mier, en-droit, Feinte, gloi-re, hon-te, in-de, lors-que, mon-sieur, nul-le, oeil-let, pou-dre, quar-tier, rou-ge, soi-e, Tê-te, vi-e, y-vre.

Words of three Syllables.

A-mi-tié, bien-fai-sant, ca-nail-le, de-ni-er, to deny; *en-nu-yeux, fai-né-ant, guer-rié-re, ha-ï-e, jeu-ne-sse, la-pe-rau, mon-ta-gne na-tu-re, o-reil-le, pa-ti-ent, ques-ti-on, ra-re-ment, sci-en-ce, a-mé-re, ul-ce-re, ver-tu-eux, y-vro-gne, ze-lé-es.*

§. *Of true Writing.*

THe Word *Orthography* is taken from a *Greek* Word compounded of *Right* and *Writing*, becauſe it teaches the Way how to write rightly in any Language.

Of the old Orthography.

A great many Letters not pronounc'd were formerly written in the *French* Words, which were a great ſtumbling Block to that Language, under the frivolous Pretence of *Etymology*, and which are now left out, ſuch as, *A* out of *Saoul*, *B* out of *Debte*, *L* out of *Aulne*, *H* out of *Echole*, and *Threſor*, and *S* out of *Feſte*, *Teſte*, &c. as being deriv'd from ſo many *Latin*, *Greek*, or *Italian* Words, which are now all written according to their Pronunciation, *Soul*, *Dette*, *Aune*, *Ecole*, *Treſor*, *Fête*, *Tête*, &c.

Of the new Orthography.

The new *Orthography* keeps the double Conſonant or Liquid, when they are found double in the *Latin*, as *College*, *Commode*, *Commettre*, *Affliger*, *Anneau*, *Terre*, *Effet*; but it takes away the double *L*, tho' it be ſo in the *Latin*, when it cauſes a wrong Pronunciation, as *Anguile*, *Tranquile*, yet we muſt write *Ville*, a Town, *Mille*, a Thouſand, to diſtinguiſh them from *Vile*, baſe; *Mile*, a Mile; it keeps the double Liquid and Conſonant in Verbs compounded of a ſimple Verb, and the Prepoſitions *ab* or *ad*; as alſo, in Nouns compounded

with the like Prepoſitions; as, *Abbatre*, *Accourir*, *Allouer*, *Arranger*, *Attirer*, *Rapporter*, *Affront*, *Attract*, *Rapport*; but the *d* in the Prepoſition *ad* is changed into the Letter that begins the Simple.

It keeps the double *nn* in Derivatives of Primitives, ending with *in*, *on*, and *en*, tho' they ſhould have a ſingle *n* in the *Latin*; as, *Don*, *Donner*, *Raiſon*, *Raiſonnable*, *Chien*, *Chienne*, *Mien*, *Mienne*, &c. But *Honeur*, *honête*, *Enemie* are to be written with a ſingle *n*, becauſe they don't come from any Primitive ending in *on* and *en*, nor have a double *n* in the *Latin*.

It caſts away the double Conſonant in *Derivatives*, when the Conſonant is not double in their *Latin*, except between two *E's*; as, *Rate*, *Incarnate*, *Flote*, *Floter*, *Netoyer*, *Loterie*; but you muſt write *Cette*, *Celle*, *Jette*, becauſe the doubling of the Conſonant ſhews the right Pronunciation of the firſt E, which is half open.

It caſts away *z* final from the Singular of Nouns, ending in *ez*, and from Adverbs of the ſame Termination, except in *Nez*, the Noſe, to diſtinguiſh it from *Né*, Born, in *Dez*, *Diez*, from, *Dès*, from or ſince, and in *Chez*, to ſave its Pronunciation of E Maſculine, and, inſtead of it, an S is now written, and a grave Accent is now put upon the *E*, becauſe the Z made the *E* to be pronounced Maſculine, whereas it is half open.

Z is now changed into S, in the Plural of Subſtantives, and Præter-participles, whoſe Singular ends

ends in *e* Maſculine; for theſe Reaſons, (1.) Becauſe it is the Characteriſtical Letter of the ſecond Perſon plural of Verbs. (2.) Becauſe the Plural of every Præter-participle would form an Equivocation, with the ſecond Perſon plural of the Imperative of the ſame Verb.

Oreil, *Orier*, *Raze*, *Razer*, are now written with an *S*, becauſe there are no *Z* in their Primitives; and *S* is now us'd inſtead of *Z*, in *Batiſer*, *Scandaliſer*, tho' there be *Z* in their *Greek*, ſince to make the *French Orthography* more eaſy, *S* between two Vowels has the ſame Sound as *Z*.

It changeth the Diphthong *eu*, in the Præter-participles into *u*, becauſe the ſaid Diphthong occaſions a wrong Pronunciation; thus, *Receu*, *veu*, *beu*, *pleu*, *leu* are written *reçû*, *vû*, *bû*, *plû*, *lû*, and *fû*, late, to diſtinguiſh it from *Feu*, Fire. But the Præter-participle *eu*, had, is excepted to diſtinguiſh it from the Letter *u*.

Laſtly, X in *Dixaine*, *Sixaine* is changed into *z*, and *C* is kept in Words that have *C* in their Primitives; as, *Soupçon*, *façon*; it is even ſo with *x*, thus, one muſt write *Reflexion* with an *x*, and not *ct*. But, after all,

The *French* Orthography is not ſo eaſily attain'd; becauſe, (1.) A great many Letters, *not pronounc'd*, enter into the Compoſition of *French*

(1.) *Monuments*, *Eſprits*, *Saints*, *ils donnent*, *ils donneient*, &c. are pronounced almoſt as if there were, but, *Monuman*, *Eſpri*, *Sin*, *i donne*, *i donnêt*. (2.) *Ai*

French Words. (2.) That the *ſame Letter*, or the ſame *ſame Combination of Letters*, are employ'd to *expreſs* different Sounds. (3.) The ſame Sound is often expreſs'd by *quite different Characters*. And, (4.) That a great Number of *French* Expreſſions, being borrow'd from the *Greek* and *Latin* Languages, they are written in ſuch a Manner, as thereby to let their Origin be known: And therefore, it is not poſſible to attain a *thorough Knowledge* of Orthography without great Study; and, this Study depends *abſolutely* upon the Knowledge of the *Rules* of the *French* Language.

(2.) *Ai* is pronounc'd as a cloſe *E* in *je chantai, je chanterai*; and as an open *E* in *Palais, Dais, Raiſon*: *E* is *mute* in *Retour*; *cloſe* in *Région*, and *open* in *Regne*: *Oi* is pronounc'd different in, *Loi, Foi, Emploi*; from what it is in *Connoitre, Paroitre, je Liſois, je Lirois*.

(3.) The ſame final Sound *an* is pronounc'd in *Diamant, Normand, Serment, Sang, Banc, Sens, Sans, Camp, Plan*, &c. the ſame Sound *in*, in *Venin, Vain, Vin, Saint, Peint, Deſſein, Faim*, &c. the ſame Sound *ai* a little more or leſs open in *Proces, Arrêt, Plait, Sais, Promets, Connois, Ecrivoient*, &c.

(4.) *Philoſophie* is written, and not *Filoſofie*; *Orthographe*, and not *Ortografe*; *Phraſe*, and not *Fraſe*; *Syllabe*, and not *Silabe*; *Rhétorique*, not *Retorique*; *Myſtere*, not *Miſtere*; *Prudent*, not *Prudant*; and *Intention*, not *Intantion*, &c. becauſe theſe Words derive from the *Greek* and *Latin* Languages; and to preſerve the Traces of their *Etymology*.

I ſhall

I shall then lay down as many *General Rules* as is possible for me, upon each Part of Speech; and remit the rest to *Practice*, *Dictionaries*, and the reading of *Approven Authors*.

The Orthography of the *Articles* is the same as you will find them in their proper Chapter; so is that of the *Nouns* and *Verbs*: Only the second Person singular of the Imperative of the first Conjugation, and those of the second that end in *E* mute, take an *S*, when the Particles *en* or *y* follow immediately. Thus it is written, *Donne un peu plus d'attention à ton devoir*; Give a little more Attention to your Duty. But we must write, *De l'Argent que l'on t'a envoyé donnes-en la Moitié à ton frere*; Of the Money that has been sent you give the Half to your Brother. *Voila une Leçon à etudier, donnes-y toute ton Application*; There's a Lesson to study, give your utmost Application to it.

And so is that of the *Participles*; only some General Rules must be given how to know precisely when the *Participles Passive*, join'd to the Auxiliary Verbs, are *declinable* or *indeclinable*; that is, when they agree, or not agree, in *Gender* and *Number* with the *Nouns* they are join'd with.

(1) They are *ordinarily indeclinable*, when any of the Tenses of the Auxiliary Verb *Avoir* goes before them: Thus we must write, *Les grands Princes ont toujours protegé les Sciences*; Great Princes have always protected the Sciences; and not *Protegés*, in making it refer

to

to *Princes*; nor *Protegées*, in making it refer to *Sciences*.

(2.) The Paſſive Participles preceded by the Tenſes of *Avoir*, are *ordinarily declinable* when their *Abſolute Regimen*, expreſs'd by a Conjunctive or Relative Pronoun, goes before them: Thus, to make the Application of the two General Rules in one ſingle Example, we muſt write, *J'ai reçû les Lettres que vous m'avez écrites au ſujet de l'affaire que je vous avois propoſée; et aprés les avoir luës avec attention, j'ai reconnu comme vous, que ſi je l'avois entrepriſe j'y aurois trouvé des obſtacles que je n'avois pas prevus*; I receiv'd the Letters you writ me on the Affair I had propos'd to you; and, after reading them ſeriouſly, I have diſcovered, as you have done, that, if I had attempted it, I would have met with Obſtacles I had not forſeen.

Exceptions from this RULE.

The ſame *Participles*, tho' preceded by their *abſolute Regimen*, become again *Indeclinable*.

(1.) When the Nominative of the Verb comes after it: Thus we muſt write, *Vous devez etre ſatisfait de la Juſtice que vous ont* rendu *vos Juges*; You ought to be ſatisfy'd with the Juſtice your Judges have done you: Whereas, in putting the Nominative before the Verb, it muſt be thus written, *Que vous Juges vous ont* renduë.

(2.) When the Participle is follow'd by a Noun in the *Accuſative*, which *refers* to the firſt *Regimen*, and makes a Part of it: Thus,

in ſpeaking of *Adam* and *Eve*, we muſt ſay, *Dieu les avoit* créé *Innocents, et les promeſſes trompeuſes du Demon les ont* rendu *coupables*; God had created them innocent, and the deceitful Promiſes of the Devil has rendred them guilty.

(3.) When the Participle is follow'd by a *Verb* join'd to it, in ſuch a Manner, that it preſents but one Idea, and makes but one Senſe with the *Participle*, that it can't be ſeparated from it, without *changing* the Senſe of the Phraſe, and that the preceeding abſolute Regimen depends more upon it, than on the *Participle*. Examples will ſet this in a clear Light; as, *N'avez-vous pas envie de pratiquer les vertus que vous avez* entendu *louer*? Have you no Inclination to practiſe the Virtues you have heard commended? *Combien d'hommes retombent dans les deſordres qu'ils avoient* reſolu *d'eviter*? How many Men relapſe into the Diſorders they had reſolv'd to evite? *Pourquoi vous etes-vous ecarté de la route que vous aviez* commencé *à ſuivre*? Why have you deviate from the Courſe you had begun to follow?

Whereas we ſhould write, *On nous a contraints de marcher*; They conſtrain'd us to Walk: Becauſe there, *nous* is rather the Regimen of the Verb *contraindre*, than of the Verb *marcher*: Beſides, theſe two *Verbs* preſent each of them a *particular Idea*, and they may be ſeparated without changing the Senſe of the Phraſe; ſince, when we ſay only, *On nous a con-*

a contraints, this Participle has ſtill the ſame Signification that it had when join'd to the Verb *marcher*; which can't be ſaid of that other Phraſe, *On nous a fait marcher*, where the Participle, and the Verb, only preſenting us with *one Idea* are ſo inſeparable, that, in cutting of *marcher*, the reſt, *On nous a fait*, has no more the ſame Signification.

The Participles are no leſs *Indeclinable* when theſe ſecond Verbs are underſtood; as, *Je vous ai rendu tous les Services que j'ai* dû *et que j'ai* pû; I have done you all the Service that I ſhould, or that I could: That is, *Que j'ai dû, et que j'ai pû vous rendre.*

(4.) When the Participle, and the Verb *Avoir* are imploy'd *Impersonally*, thus muſt be written, *Les chaleurs exceſſives qu'il a fait, ont* cauſé *beaucoup de Maladies*; It has been ſo exceſſively hot that it has occaſion'd great Sickneſs.

The third General Rule, The *Paſſive Participles* preceded by the Tenſes of *Etre* are always *declinable*, when *Etre* is taken in its proper Signification as a *Subſtantive Verb*; and it is always taken in that Senſe when join'd to *Neutral*, *Paſſive*, *Reciprocal*, and *Reciprocal Verbs by Expreſſion*; as, *Les Juifs ſont Tombés dans le péché de l'Idolâtrie*; The Jews have fallen into the Sin of Idolatry. *Les Lettres ont eté inventées, pour peindre la parole, et pour parler aux Yeux*; Letters and Writing have been invented to paint Speech, and to talk to the Eye. *Les*

mauvai-

mauvaiſes Nouvelles ſe ſont toujours repandues plus promptement que les bonnes; Bad News are more haſtily ſpread than good. *Nos premiers Peres ne s'etoient point apperçûs de leur nudité avant leur Crime*; Our firſt Parents were not ſenſible of their being naked before their Sin.

If there be a *Conjunctive Pronoun* before the Participles *Allé* and *Venu*, follow'd by another Verb, theſe Participles are *Indeclinable*; thus, *Elle nous eſt venu voir*; She is come to ſee us, *Elle lui eſt allé porter de l'Argent*; She is gone to carry him ſome Money. Otherwiſe we ſhould write, *Elle eſt venuë nous voir*. *Elle eſt allée lui porter de l'Argent.*

The fourth General Rule, When the Tenſes of the Verb *Etre* that go before the *Paſſive Participles* have the Signification of the Verb *Avoir*, then theſe Participles are *Declinable* or *Indeclinable* in the ſame Caſes, that the Participles preceded by the Verb *Avoir* are; and they have always the Signification of *Avoir* before the Participles of *Direct* and *Indirect Reciprocal Verbs*: Thus, when I ſay, Caton *s'eſt* tué *plutôt que de tomber entre les Mains de* Cæſar; *Cato* killed himſelf rather than fall into *Cæſar*'s Hands: This is, as if I ſaid, Caton *a tué ſoi*; and when I ſay, Lucrece *s'eſt* donné *la Mort ne pouvant ſurvivre à l'Affront qu'elle avoit reçû de* Tarquin; *Lucretia* gave her ſelf a mortal Wound, incapable of ſurviving the Affront ſhe had receiv'd from *Tarquin*; is the ſame as if I had ſaid, Lucrece *a donné la Mort à ſoi*: But it muſt be remembred,

bred, That in the *Direct* Reciprocal Verbs, the Conjunctive Pronouns, *Me*, *Te*, *Se*, *Nous*, *Vous*, *Se*, are always *abſolute* Regimens; and, that they never are but *Relative* Regimens in the *Indirect* Reciprocals.

In order to ſet this delicate Part of Grammar in as clear a Light as poſſible, tho' it may concern the *Syntax* as much as *Orthography*, I ſhall apply the above Rules and Exceptions to ſome Examples for the *Direct*, and *Indirect* Reciprocals, as far as they may agree to either.

The Firſt General Rule is only for the *Indirect* Reciprocals; as, *Les Hommes ſe ſont* bati *des villes pour leur Sûreté*; Men have built themſelves Cities for their Safety.

The Second General Rule agrees to both *Direct* and *Indirect* Reciprocals; as, *Les* Romains *ſe ſont* agrandis *par la Defaite de leurs Voiſins*; The *Romans* aggrandiz'd themſelves by the Defeat of their Neighbours. *Les Sujets de Republiques ſuivent ordinairement les Loix qu' ils ſe ſont* preſcrites; The Subjects of Republicks generally follow the Laws they have preſcrib'd to themſelves.

The Firſt Exception *agrees to both*, on *ſome* Occaſions; as, *à quelles extremitées ne ſe ſont* porté *les Ennemis de* Charles II. *pour le fruſtrer de ſes Droits? et quelle reputation s'eſt* fait *le Héros qui les a deconcertés?* To what Extremities were the Enemies of *Charles* II. diſpos'd to fruſtrate

fruſtrate Him of his juſt Rights? and what Reputation did that Hero acquire, Who rendred their Plots abortive? However, it were better to put the Nominative, in moſt Caſes, before theſe Kinds of Verbs.

The Second Exception alſo agrees with the *Direct* and *Indirect* Reciprocals; as, *Les* Amazones *ſe ſont* rendu *celebres par leur Courage dans la guerre*; The *Amazones* made themſelves famous by their Courage in War. *Les premiers Croiſés n'ont tenté la Conquête de la terre ſainte que parce qu'ils ſe la ſont* figuré *plus aiſée qu' elle n'etoit*; The Firſt *Cruſado's* did not attempt the Conqueſt of the Holy Land, but from a Belief, that it would be more eaſy than they found it.

As does the Third Exception; *Les troupes de* Charles VII. *n'auroient pas empeché la priſe d'* Orleans, *ſi elles ne ſe fuſſent* laiſſé *conduire par une jeune fille*; The Troops of *Charles* VII. would not have prevented the taking of *Orleans*, if they had not ſuffered themſelves to be led on by a Maid. *Nous ne devons point paſſer de jour ſans donner quelque tems à la Science que nous nous ſommes* propoſé *d'etudier.*

The Fourth Exception can agree to neither of theſe Kind of Verbs, becauſe they never can be imploy'd Impersonally, as the Verbs can that take the auxiliary Verb *Avoir.*

Almoſt all Grammarians acquieſce in the Four General Rules I have laid down; but, they are divided about the Exceptions, and I have in them gone into the Sentiments of Mr.

Mr. *L'Abbé Regnier Desmarais*; who, in Quality of Secretary to the Royal Academy at *Paris*, is the Person whose Authority should be of greatest Weight, in any Difficulty or Intricacy of the *French* Language.

The Orthography of Adverbs, Prepositions, Conjunctions, and Interjections.

General Rules can only be given for the Orthography of the Adverbs of *Manner*, deriv'd from Adjective Nouns; for the others, for the Prepositions and Interjections, Recourse must be had to Practice and approven Authors.

The Orthography of these Adverbs regards their *Formation* and *Termination*.

The General Rule is to add *ment*, which is always their Termination, to the Feminine Singular of the Adjective Noun; thus, *Grande*, great; *Douce*, sweet; *Nouvelle*, new; *Sage*, wise; form *Grandement*, greatly; *Doucement*, sweetly, or softly; *Nouvellement*, newly; *Sagement*, wisely; the E that goes before the Syllable *ment* is always mute in these Adverbs: Except in *Aveuglement*, blindly; *Commodement*, commodiously; *Communément*, commonly; *Conformément*, agreeably; *Impunément*, unpunished; *Précisément*, precisely; *Profondément*, profoundly; and a few others, where the E is Masculine.

Exceptions, (1.) Nouns ending in *ant* or *ent* form their Adverbs by changing the Two last Letters *nt* into *mment*, with Two *mm*'s; as,

Vail-

Vaillant, *Vaillamment*, valiantly; *Diligent*, *Diligemment*, diligently; but *Lent*, ſlow; *Preſent*, preſent; have *Lentement*, ſlowly; *Preſentement*, preſently, according to the General Rule.

(2.) When Adjective Nouns end in the Maſculine with a ſhut *E*, *ment* is only added to form their Adverbs; and the *E* before *ment* continues ſhut: It is even ſo with Adjectives terminating in the Maſculine with *I* or *U*; thus, *Aiſé*, eaſy; *Senſé*, ſenſible; *Modéré*, moderate; form *Aiſement*, eaſily; *Senſement*, ſenſibly; *Moderément*, moderately; and *Infini*, infinite; *Poli*, polite; *Abſolu*, abſolute; *Ingenu*, ingenuous; form *Infiniment*, infinitely; *Poliment*, politely; *Abſolument*, abſolutely; *Ingenument*, ingenuouſly.

Yet, *Gaiement*, jovially; *Vraiement*, truly; *Duement*, duely; *Nuement*, nakedly; *Cruement*, bluntly; follow the general Rule.

Obſervations on the Orthography of ſome Words; and on the Uſe of ſome Letters, which are frequently to be met with; and, about which it is abſolutely neceſſary to have certain Rules. And firſt, of *La*, or *Là*.

La is always wrote without an Accent, when it is an Article, or conjunctive Pronoun; as, La *Terre ne produiroit rien, ſi elle n'etoit echauffée par les Rayons du ſoleil, et humectée par les eaux de* la *pluie, qui* la *diſpoſent à pouſſer, au dehors les plantes dont elle a reçu* la *Semence*; The Earth would produce nothing, if it were not warmed

by the Sun-beams, and moiſtned by the Drops of the Rain, which qualify it to bring forth the Plants, whoſe Seed it has received.

It is always mark'd with a grave Accent, when it is imploy'd as an Adverb of *Place*, or coming after a demonſtrative Pronoun ſerves to point out or deſign ſome Object; as, *Que faites-vous* là? What are you doing there? We ſay alſo, *Celui*-là, *celle*-là, *cet homme*-là, *cette femme*-là, He, or ſhe, this, or that Man, or Woman there.

Du, or *Dû*, *Du* is always wrote without an Accent, when it is an Article, and it takes the Circumflex, when it is the Participle Paſſive of the Verb, *Devoir*, to diſtinguiſh it from the Article; thus, *Les* Romains *n'avoient point l'uſage* du *verre pour les fenêtres*, *ni* du *linge pour les chemiſes*, *ni* du *papier pour l'Ecriture*; The *Romans* had neither the Uſe of Glaſs for Windows, nor of Linen for Shirts, nor of Paper for writing. But we muſt write, *Vous auriez* dû *renoncer plûtôt au jeu, et à la mauvaiſe Compagnie*; You ſhould have ſooner abandon'd Game and bad Company. *Rendons à Dieu l'hommage qui lui eſt* dû; Let us pay to God the Homage due to him.

Dès, or *Des*, when an Article, it is always wrote without an Accent; but it takes the grave Accent, and is pronounced more open, when it is a Prepoſition, or Conjunction of Time; thus we write, *La commodité* des *Etriers pour monter à cheval etoit ignorée des Anciens*;

The

The Conveniency of Stirrups for mounting on Horſe-back was unknown to the Ancients. Whereas we muſt write; thus, Quintus Cincinnatus *reprit la charuë dès qu'il eût quitté la Dictature*; *Q. Cincinnatus* reſum'd the Plough, ſo ſoon as he reſign'd the Dictatorſhip.

A, or à, *A* making a Word by itſelf is always written without an Accent, when it is the third Perſon Sing. of the Preſent of the Indicative of *Avoir*; and with a grave Accent, when it is an Article or Prepoſition; as may be ſeen in theſe Phraſes: *Il y* a *moins de gloire* à *vaincre un Ennemi qu'* à *lui pardonner quand on l'*a *vaincu*; There is leſs Glory in overcoming an Enemy, than in pardoning him afterwards.

Ce, ces, or *Se, Ses*. *Ce* wrote with a *C* is a demonſtrative Pronoun; and wrote with an *S*, it is a Poſſeſſive Pronoun; as in this Phraſe, *Croiriez-vous que* ce *papier ſur lequel vous Ecrivez* ſe *fait avec les chifons de linge qu'on ramaſſe dans les Rues?* Could you believe, that this Paper, whereon you write, is made of Linen Rags gathered off the Streets?

Ces by a *C*, is the Plural of *Ce*; *Ses* by an *S* is the Plural of *Son* or *Sa*, poſſeſſive Pronouns; as, *Que ſont devenus* ces *fameux Conquerants que l'homme aveuglé mettoit au nombre de* ſes *Dieux?* What is become of theſe famous Conquerors, whom blind Man had rank'd amongſt his Gods?

Leur is indeclinable, and never takes *S* in the End, when it is a conjunctive Pronoun; but,

when a poſſeſſive Pronoun, it takes an *S* in the Plural; as in this Phraſe, *Quand je vois les Oiſeaux former* leurs *Nids avec tant d'art et d'adreſſe, je demande, quel Maître* leur *a appris l'Architecture?* When I ſee the Birds forming their Neſts with ſo much Art and Skill, I ask, what Maſter hath taught them Architecture?

Mes and *Mais*. *Mes* is the Plural of the poſſeſſive Pronouns, *Mon*, or *Ma*; *Mais*, which is pronounced a little more open than *Mes*, is an adverſative Conjunction; as for Example, Mes *Livres m'auroient deſennuyé dans ma Solitude*, Mais *on a eu la dureté de me les enlever*; My Books would have diverted me in my Solitude, but they have been ſo hard-hearted as to take them from me.

Dont or *Donc*. *Dont* is written with a *T*, when it is a Relative Pronoun, and with a *C*, when it is a concluſive Conjunction; as in this Phraſe, *Tous les biens* dont *nous jouiſſons viennent de Dieu, nous devons* donc *lui en rendre de continuelles actions de graces*; All the good things we enjoy come from God, we ought therefore to be continually praiſing his Name for them.

Quand or *Quant*. *Quand* with a *d* is an Adverb of Time, or a Conjunction that marks ſome Circumſtances of it; and with a *t* it is a Prepoſition that governs the Dative; as, Quant *au genre de vie que vous devez embraſſer, ne vous y déterminez, que* quand *vous vous ſerez bien examiné*; As to the Kind of Life you ought to embrace,

Trace. do not determine, but after having throughly examin'd your ſelf.

Sur, or *Sûr*. *Sur*, when a Prepoſition is written without an Accent, and when an Adjective it has the Circumflex Accent. Example, *Pour peu que vous voulliez faire reflexion* ſur *l'inſtabilité des choſes d'ici bas, je ſuis* ſûr *que vous vous tournerez vers le ſeul bien réel et ſolide, qui eſt Dieu*; If you will but reflect a little on the Inſtability of ſublunary Things, I'm certain you will have Recourſe to God, the only real and ſolid Good.

Ou or *Où*. *Ou* is alwaye wrote without an Accent, when it is a disjunctive Conjunction; as, Ou *changez de Conduite*, ou *ne paroiſſez plus devant vos Amis*; You muſt either alter your Conduct, or think no more of ſeeing your Friends.

Où is written with the grave Accent on two Occaſions. (1.) When it is an Adverb of Place; as, Où *allez-vous?* Where are you going? *Dites-moi* où *vous demeurez?* Tell me where you ſtay? (2.) When it is put for the Relative Pronouns, *Lequel* and *Laquelle*; Example, *La haine et la flatterie ſont les écueils* où *la verité fait naufrage*; Hatred and Flattery are the Shelves whereon Truth ſuffers Shipwrack; that is to ſay, *contre leſquels*. *Quel ſont les principes d'*où *vous tirez cette conſequence?* What are the Principles from whence you draw this Conſequence? That is, *Deſquels*.

Quelque, Tout, Même; These three Words moſt commonly imploy'd as Adjectives declinable, and take an *S* in their Plural; ſometimes they are alſo us'd as Adverbs indeclinable, and in this Caſe have no *S*, tho' join'd to Plural Nouns. I ſhall only here obſerve when they are indeclinable.

(1.) *Quelque* is indeclinable, whenever it goes before an Adjective, not follow'd immediately by its Subſtantive; that is, when this Subſtantive is plac'd before *quelque*, or, being after the Adjective, it is ſeparated from it by the Conjunction, *que*, and by the Verb, *Etre*; Examples, *Avec le tems et la patience, on apprivoiſe les Animaux*, quelque *feroces qu'ils puiſſent etre*; With Time and Patience Animals are tamed, however fierce they may be by Nature. Quelque *eloignées que ſoient les planetes de la Terre*; At how great ſo ever Diſtance from the Earth the Planets are.

It is alſo indeclinable, when it ſignifies *Environ*, about; Example, *Il y a* quelque *trois cens ans, que l'Imprimerie a eté trouvée*; It is ſome three hundred Years, ſince Printing was found out. That is, *Il y a* environ *trois cens ans.*

(2.) When *Tout* is before an Adjective, or Noun conſider'd as ſuch, follow'd by the Conjunction, *que*; if that Adjective is Maſculine, *Tout* is indeclinable; thus we muſt write, *Les Anciens Philoſophes* tout *eclairés qu'ils etoient ignoraient les veritables cauſes de bien des Effets naturels*; The ancient Philoſophers, however knowing

knowing they might be, were ignorant of the true Cauſes of many natural Effects.

If the Adjective be Feminine, and in the Singular, or when in the Plural, it begins with a Conſonant, then *Tout* is declinable; and we write, Toute *agreable et* toute *belle que ſoit la campagne, on s'y ennuie ſi on n'y trouve compagnie, ou des livres*; As agreeable and pleaſant as the Country is, one wearies in it, if they neither meet with Company nor Books. *Les propoſitions d'*Euclide toutes *difficilles qu'elles ſont*; However difficult the Propoſitions of *Euclid* are.

If the Adjective is Feminine, in the Plural, and begin with a Vowel, *Tout* becomes again indeclinable; thus, *La Mere, la femme, et les filles de* Darius, tout *affligées, et* tout *abattues qu'elles etoient, ne purent s'empecher d'admirer la généroſité d'*Alexandre; The Mother, Wife and Daughters of *Darius*, however afflicted and dejected, could not hinder themſelves from admiring *Alexander*'s Generoſity.

The ſame Rules agree to *Tout*, when it ſignifies *Entierement*; as, *Ils ſont* tout *reſolus de n'y plus retourner*; They are fully reſolv'd to return thither no more. *Elle eſt* toute *conſolée*; or, *Elles ſont* toutes *conſolées de leur perte*. She is, or, they are perfectly comforted for her or their Loſs. *A ces mots elles demeurerent* tout *interdites*. At theſe Words they remain'd quite ſilent.

(3.) *Même* is always declinable when preceeded by the Definite Article, and is only indeclinable when coming immediately after a

Noun or Pronoun; it is employ'd in the Senſe of the Adverbs *auſſi*, *de plus*, or *en outre*; and you will diſcover, that it has this Signification, when, without altering the Senſe of the Phraſe, you can tranſpoſe it with the Conjunction *et* before the Noun or Pronoun: Thus, *Les* Egyptiens *reconnoiſſoient pour Dieux*, *des Animaux*, *des Reptiles*, *des Plantes* même; The *Egyptians* paid Divine Honours to Animals, to Reptiles, and even to Plants: That is to ſay, *Et* même *des Plantes.*

When *même* goes before a Noun, or is join'd to a Verb; it is always an Adverb, and conſequently indeclinable.

Of the Greek *Y.*

This Letter, of it ſelf, has no other Sound but that of the Vowel *I*: It is preſerv'd in the *French* on Account of Etymology, in Words deriv'd from the *Greek*, where it ſtands in Place of their *Upſilon*; but inſtead of allowing it the Sound of *U*, they have given it that of *I*: Thus, by bringing it nearer to its Original in the Character, they have removed it, ſo much the more, in its Pronunciation.

Some have afterwards, without any Foundation, made it ſupply the Place of the ſimple *i* in the End of a great many Words, as *Fourmy*, *Luy*, *Celuy*, *Eſſay*, *Roy*, *Loy*, *Jay*, *Jaimay*, &c.

But as it is probable, That formerly when two *ii*'s met together in one Word, the latter has been lengthen'd thus, *ij*, to diſtinguiſh them

them from ï with two Points; and afterwards transform'd into *Y*.

Therefore, since Persons skilled in the *Greek* can only judge when it is proper to imploy the *Greek Y*, with regard to Etymology, the Idea of it being but imperfect, and the Sound quite different from the *Upsilon*; it would be no great Fault in Orthography, to imploy the simple *i* in Words deriv'd from the *Greek*, without regard to their Original; especially, since the Practice of a great Number of excellent Authors has authoriz'd it.

But when the Sound of two Vowel *ii*'s is to be expres'd, the *Greek Y* may be usefully imploy'd; this is its proper Province, and here is the Rule.

The *Greek Y* should be imploy'd to express the Sound of two *ii*'s, when the first makes a Part of the preceeding Syllable; and the second joins with the following: Thus must be written, *Payeur, Joyeux, Voyons, Pays, Payſan, &c.* which are pronounc'd as it were, *Pai-ieur, Joi-ieux, Voi-ions, Pai-is, Pai-is-an*; but we must write without *Y*, *Païen, Faïance, Caïer, Aïeul*, &c. because in these Words we only hear the Sound of one *i*, *Pa-ien, Fa-iance, Ca-ier, A-ieul*, &c.

There are some Words where the Sound of three *i*'s is heard; and, consequently, it is proper to add a simple *i* after the *y*. They are to be found in the first and second Persons Plural of the Imperfect of the Indicative, and Present of

of the Subjunctive, of Verbs which have *y* before the Termination *ant* of the Active Participle: Conſequently, of *Payant* is form'd *nous Payions, vous Payiez, que nous Payions, que vous Payiez*, &c.

The *y* ſometimes makes a Word of it ſelf, when it is either a Conjunctive Pronoun, as, *Ne vous y fiez pas*, Do not truſt him, her, them, or it; or, Adverb of Place, as, *Nous y allons*, We go thither; or, when it renders the Verb *Avoir* impersonal, as, *Il y a Sujet de croire*, There is Ground to believe.

Y is ſtill preſerv'd in *Yeux*, *Yvre*, and *Yvoire*, where it has certainly been plac'd, in the Time when *J* and *V* Conſonants, or Vowels, were writ with the ſame Characters; and to hinder their Pronunciation, like *Jeux*, *Jure*, *Juoire*.

I have already taken Notice of the Letters *H*, *L*, *S*, *X*, and *Z*, and ſhall next proceed to *Proſody*.

PART II. *Of Proſody.*

Of the French *Quantity.*

Quantity is the pronouncing of a Syllable long or ſhort, according as the Vowel it is compos'd of, is long or ſhort; for the diſtinguiſhing of which, obſerve theſe Rules:

Theſe Vowels A, E, O, are pronounc'd long, when they are mark'd with a Circumflex Accent, thus, *Pâte*, *Bête*, *Côte*.

A, E,

A, E, O, are long when ſhut by a Conſonant not pronounc'd, as, *Appas, Canard, Poulet, Arret, Gros, Brulot.*

A, E, O, are founded long before a Syllable ſhut by an E Feminine, as, *Ame, Sale, Perte, Treve, Pole, Porte*; yet theſe, *ce, che, de, ge, gne, ne, que, te*; as alſo double Conſonants, or Liquids except R, make the foregoing Syllable ſhort, as, *Face, Tache*, a Stain; *Poche, Parade, Remede, Mode, Fromage, Mariage, Campagne, Enſeigne, Cane, Mene, Nones, Attaque, Grecque, Coque, Rate, Vete, Culote, Patte, Cette, Cotte, Chaſſe, Ceſſe, Boſſe, Elle, Folle, Manne, Prenne, Somme, Tonne.*

A Vowel not mark'd with any Accent, and cloſing the Syllable, is ſhort, if it is before another Syllable not ſhut by a Feminine E, as, *Matin, Leve, Honoré.*

R and L final, or a Conſonant, pronounc'd, make the foregoing Vowel, or Diphthongs *Eu* or *Oi* ſhort, as, *Par, Eſſor, Mal, Sel, Caracol, Vol, Sac, Sec, Vif, Dol, Leur, Poil:* R and L in the Middle of Words, not before an E, ſhut by an E Feminine, make alſo the foregoing Syllable ſhort, as, *Calmer, Poltron, Partir, Impertinent.*

The Vowels I, U, Y, and the Diphthongs are always long, except in the foregoing Caſes.

A Syllable long or ſhort in the Primitive and Simple, remains ſuch in their Derivatives and Compounds.

§. *Of*

§. Of Eliſion and Inſertion.

Eliſion is the cutting off of a final Vowel before another Initial, or an *H* mute, to prevent the Harſhneſs of the Sounds of theſe two Vowels, if they were both pronounc'd.

It is mark'd with a *Comma*, called an *Apoſtrophe*, ſet above the empty Space of the Vowel cut off, as, *l'Autre*, the other; *l'Année*, the Year; *l'Honeur*, the Honour.

In an Interrogation, where the Nominative Pronoun is tranſpos'd, that Tranſpoſition muſt be mark'd by a *Hyphen*, otherwiſe called a Diviſion, or Note of Continuation, thus (-) as, *Vient-il? Que dit-elle?*

But when the third Perſon of Verbs ends with *A*, or *E*, a *T* ought to be inſerted betwixt two Hyphens, in order to ſoften the Pronunciation, as, *Parla-t-elle, Que Cherche-t-elle.*

In the ſecond Perſon Singular of the Impeſative, an *S* is inſerted before *Y*, or *en*, as, *Vas-y, Prens-en.*

The proper Uſe of a Hyphen is to join two, or more, Words together, as, *Très-beau, C'eſt-à-dire, Arc-en-ciel.*

§. Of Accents.

The Uſe of Accents is to ſhew the true Pronunciation of Vowels; there are three Sorts of them, the *Acute*, the *Grave*, the *Circumflex*.

The *Acute* mark'd thus (´) falls upon é Maſculine final, as, *Bonté, Demandé.* (2.) Upon é Maſcu-

é Maſculine in the Beginning or Middle of a Word, formerly accompanied with a Mute *S*, as, *épeler*, *Deſaire*, *Mépriſer*, *Preter*. (3.) Upon E coming from the *Latin* Diphthong *æ*, or *œ*; or, from *èta* of the *Greeks*, *éternel*, *économie*, *Rhétorique*.

The *Grave* thus (`) upon è in the laſt Syllable of Adverbs and Subſtantives ending in *es*, as, *Près*, near; *Excès*, thoſe two *è*'s are not ſo open as È in *Prête*, lend thou; nor ſo cloſe as the E in *Prés*, Meadows. (2.) Upon *a* or *u* in theſe Adverbs of Place, as, *à*, at or to; *là*, there; *delà*, thence; *çà*, hither; *où*, where; to diſtinguiſh them from *a*, hath; *la*, the; *de la*, of or from the; *ça*, come on; *ou*, or.

The Circumflex thus (^) upon *A*, *O*, or *U*, when an *S*, or any other Letter not pronounc'd after them, is omitted in the New Orthography, as, *Âcher*, *Côte*, *Flâme*, *Côle*, *Flûte*, *Eperdûment*; formerly written *Faſcher*, *Flaſme*, *Coſte*, *Colle*, *Fluſte*, *Eperduement*. (2.) Upon *E* when a mute *S* is taken out after it; or, before a Syllable ſhut by an *E* Feminine, as, *Empêche*, *Prête*, *Vous êtes*, *être*, *Tête*.

PART. III. *Of the Parts of Speech.*

PArts of Speech are Words differing in Kind one from another, and are ſo called, becauſe by entering into the Compoſition of Speech,

Speech, they become Parts of it; they are Nine in Number, *viz.* the *Article*, *Noun*, *Pronoun*, *Verb*, *Participle*, *Adverb*, *Prepoſition*, *Conjunction*, and *Interjection*.

CHAP. I. *Of the Articles.*

THE *Articles* are Particles plac'd before *Nouns*; their Uſe is chiefly to ſhow the *Caſe* or *Declenſion* of Nouns, which ſhall be afterwards explain'd; they are divided into *Definite*, *Indefinite*, and *Mixt* or *Partitive*.

The *Definite* are ſo called, becauſe they are imploy'd to deſign or point out a *particular* Object, or *whole Species* of Objects.

They are alſo called *Definite*, becauſe in Nouns beginning with a Conſonant they determine their *Gender* and *Number*, as well as their *Caſe* in the *Singular*: When Nouns begin with a Vowel, or H mute, the Definite Article only determines the *Number* and *Caſe*, and not the *Gender*, being common to both Genders.

The Definite Articles for *Singular Maſculine* Nouns, beginning with a *Conſonant*, are, 1. *Le*, 2. *Du*, 3. *Au*; and for the *Feminine*, 1. *La*, 2. *De la*, 3. *à la*.

When a Noun, whether Maſculine or Feminine, begins with a *Vowel* or *H mute*, the Definite Article of theſe Nouns is form'd of the *Feminine Article* of Nouns, beginning with a Conſonant, by retrenching the Letter *a*, thus, 1. *l'*; 2. *de l'*, 3. *à l'*.

The

The Definite Articles of the *Plural* are, 1. *Les*, 2. *Des*, 3. *Aux*, and are *common* to both *Genders*, and to all Nouns, whether beginning with a Vowel, Conſonant, or H mute.

You will here obſerve three Ranks in theſe Definite Articles, as there are in the others; the firſt anſwers to the *Latin* Caſes, which are called the *Nominative* and *Accuſative*; the ſecond to the *Genitive* and *Ablative*; the third to the *Dative*: And tho' in Nouns three Ranks or Caſes are only diſtinguiſh'd, yet there is a fourth in ſeveral Pronouns, which we ſhall obſerve afterwards.

I ſhall give Examples of all.

	Singular.		Plural.
	Maſculine.	Feminine.	Common to both Genders.
1. No.	*Le Prince,*	*La Princeſſe,*	*Les Princes, Les Princeſſes.*
2. Ge.	*Du Prince,*	*De la Princeſſe,*	*Des Princes, Des Princeſſes.*
3. Da	*Au Prince,*	*à la Princeſſe,*	*Aux Princes, Aux Princeſſes.*

Theſe Articles determine not only the *Caſe* and *Number*, but even the *Gender* in the *Singular*.

1. No.	*L'Ange,*	*L'Honeur,*	*Les Anges,*	*Les Honeurs.*
2. Ge.	*De l'Ange,*	*De l'Honeur,*	*Des Anges,*	*Des Honeurs.*
3. Da.	*à l'Ange,*	*à l'Honeur,*	*Aux Anges,*	*Aux Honeurs.*
1. No.	*L'Epée,*	*L'Hiſtoire,*	*Les Epées,*	*Les Hiſtoires.*
2. Ge.	*De l'Epée,*	*De l'Hiſtoire,*	*Des Epées,*	*Des Hiſtoires.*
3. Da.	*à l'Epée,*	*à l'Hiſtoire,*	*Aux Epées,*	*Aux Hiſtoires.*

Theſe Articles only determine the *Caſe* and *Number*, and not the *Gender*.

The

The ſecond Order of Articles, or the *Indefinite*, takes no Participle for its firſt *Caſe*, but takes *de* or *d'* for the ſecond, and for third *à*; thus,

1. No.	*Dieu,*	*Gens,*	*Alexandre,*	*Homme.*
2. Ge.	*De Dieu,*	*De Gens,*	*d'Alexandre,*	*d'Homme.*
3. Da.	*à Dieu,*	*à Gens,*	*à Alexandre,*	*à Homme.*
1. No.	*Pierre,*	*Marie,*	*Hanibal,*	*Anne.*
2. Ge.	*de Pierre,*	*de Marie,*	*d'Hanibal,*	*d'Anne.*
3. Da.	*à Pierre,*	*à Marie,*	*à Hanibal,*	*à Anne.*

This Article ſerves equally for *Singular* and *Plural*, for *Maſculine* and *Feminine* Nouns, and is us'd before Nouns taken in an *Indefinite*, and *Indeterminate* Senſe; or before Nouns, which of themſelves mark a *Diſtinction* ſo exact and preciſe, that they have no need of the Definite Article to point it out: In fine, they are us'd in a Senſe which neither denotes an *Individual Diſtinction*, or a *Specifick Totality*. As for Example:

When I ſay, *Plaiſir de jeunes Gens*, Young Folks Pleaſure; *Montre d'Or*, Gold Watch: I deſign neither to talk of any young Perſon, or any Kind of Gold in Particular; neither do I include in the Signification of theſe two Words, all the Species of young People; nor all Kinds of Gold in the World.

Alſo, when I put them before the Pronouns, *Moi*, *Toi*, *Vous*, &c. the moſt Part of proper Names of *Men*, *Cities*, *Stars*, and ſeveral others, which Practice will teach; theſe Nouns, &c. point out Objects ſo preciſe and diſtinguiſh'd

of

of themſelves, from all others, that they have no need of the Definite Article to mark the Diſtinction; thus we ſay, *Dieu*, *de Dieu*, *à Dieu*, *Pierre*, *de Pierre*, *à Pierre*.

'Tis true, the Definite Article is ſometimes plac'd before the ſame Nouns, but it is when they may agree to ſeveral Objects; or, when we conceive their Object as multiplied, then the Definite marks the Diſtinction; as if I ſay, *Vous devez tout eſperer de Dieu*; You ſhould hope every Thing from GOD; I conſider GOD in his general Idea: But if I ſay, *Vous devez tout eſperer du Dieu des Miſericordes*; I conſider GOD only with regard to one of his Perfections; or, rather, I conſider GOD, as multiplied by the Number of his Perfections, only looking on Him with reſpect to his Mercy; and, I uſe the Definite Article to mark that Diſtinction: It is even ſo when we ſay, Socrate, ou *le* Socrate *d'* Athenes; *Socrates*, or the *Socrates* of *Athens*. Ciceron, ou *le* Ciceron *de Notre ſiecle*; *Cicero*, or the *Cicero* of our Age. *Mecredi, ou le Mecredi-Saint*; Wedneſday, or Aſh-Wedneſday.

The third Order of Articles, or the Middle *or* Partitive *Articles.*

This is a Sort of Indefinite Article, but it takes for its firſt Caſe the Particles, which ſerve for the ſecond Caſes of the preceeding Articles, ſuch as, *Du*, *De la*, *De l'*, *Des*, *De*; for its ſecond, it takes always *De*, which is purely

indefinite: In the third Caſe, it adds *à* to the five of the firſt Caſe, thus;

1. No.	*Du Bien,*	*De la Paille,*	*De l'Eau.*
2. Ge.	*De Bien,*	*De Paille,*	*D'Eau.*
3. Da.	*à du Bien,*	*à de la Paille,*	*à de l'Eau.*
1. No.	*De bon Vin,*	*Des Savans,*	*De beaux Eſprits.*
2. Ge.	*De bon Vin,*	*De Savans,*	*De beaux Eſprits.*
3. Da.	*à de bon Vin,*	*à des Savans,*	*à de beaux Eſprits.*

This Article, which is *mixt* or *middle* with regard to its being form'd of the two others, is even ſo with reſpect to the Senſe: It is *Indefinite,* in ſo far as it ſuppoſes neither an Individual or Specifick Diſtinction in the Object; but it has ſomething of the *Definite,* in ſo far as it points out a Part of an Object, and therefore may very juſtly be called *Partitive.*

The Uſe of it is, to limit the Extent of the Signification of Nouns; thus, when I ſay, *Des Gens Savans penſent comme moi*; Learned Men think as I do: I mean ſome, not all the Men of Learning. Even ſo, when I ſay, *Du Pain me ſuffit*; Bread ſuffices me. *De l'Eau me feroit plaiſir*; Water would do me a Pleaſure. *Il me faut de la Lumiere*; I muſt have Light. It is not *Water*, *Bread*, or *Light* in general, that I ſpeak of; but of a *Part* of each, tho' that Part retains the Name of the *Whole.*

From whence we may, in ſome Meaſure, account how the ſecond Caſe in *French* comes to poſſeſs the Place of the firſt, becauſe in thoſe Sorts of Expreſſions, the firſt Caſe is ſuppos'd and underſtood; as for Example, *Des Savans*

ont cru autre fois les Anges Corporels; Learned Men formerly believ'd the Angels had Bodies. *Une Partie des Savans*; A Part of the learned Men is here underſtood.

When any of theſe Middle or Partitive Articles come before Nouns, beginning with a Vowel or *H* not aſpirated, we take the Partitive Article of the Feminine *De la*, and ſuppreſs the Letter *a*, ſubſtituting in its Room the Apoſtrophe (') and put it before both Maſculine and Feminine Nouns; thus, inſtead of ſaying, *Il a du Eſprit, de la Induſtrie, du Honneur, de la Habilité*; He has Wit, Induſtry, Honour, Skill: We ſay, *Il a de l'Eſprit, de l'Induſtrie, de l'Honeur, de l'Habilité.*

As the *Nominatives* and *Accuſatives* of this Middle Article reſemble much the *Genitives* and *Ablatives* of the Definite Article, I ſhall lay down a Method how to diſtinguiſh them.

If *Du, De la, De l', Des, De*, are before Nouns that either are Nominatives, or abſolute Regimens of ſome Verbs; or, after Prepoſitions that govern the Accuſative, they are always Middle Articles; but if they go before a Noun that follows another, or are the Relative Regimen of a Verb, they are Genitives or Ablatives of the Definite or Indefinite Articles.

Thus, in theſe Expreſſions, *Du Pain me ſuffit. De la Muſique me divertiroit*; Muſick would divert me. *De l'Eau me feroit Plaiſir. Des Auteurs raportent cette Hiſtoire*; Authors relate this Story. *Pain, Muſique, Eau, Auteurs*, are Nominatives

natives of the Verb, and conſequently *Du, De la, De l', Des,* are Middle Articles.

In theſe, *Je demande du Tems*; I require Time. *Il cherche de la Louange*; He ſeeks Applauſe. *Il donne de l'Argent*; He gives Money. *Vous achetez des Livres*; You buy Books. *Du, De la, De l', Des,* are Middle Articles, becauſe *Tems, Louange, Argent, Livres,* are abſolute Regimens of the Verb.

In theſe again, *On ſe nourrit avec du Pain*; People feed themſelves with Bread. *Il faut mettre ce Fruit dans de la Paille*; This Fruit muſt be put amongſt Straw; *J'ai diſputé contre des Philoſophes*; I diſputed againſt ſome Philoſophers. *Du, De la, Des,* are alſo Middle Articles, becauſe *Pain, Paille,* and *Philoſophes,* are abſolute Regimens of the Prepoſitions *Avec, Dans* and *Contre.*

But in theſe, *La Science du Blaſon*; The Science of Herauldry. *J'ai reçu un preſent de la Reine*; I have receiv'd a Preſent of, or from the Queen. *Je ſuis aimé des honnêtes Gens*; I am belov'd of honeſt Men. *Du, De la, Des,* are Definite Articles, becauſe they are before Nouns that are neither Nominatives, nor abſolute Regimens of Verbs; nor after Prepoſitions, that govern the Accuſative.

There is no Difference as to the Senſe betwixt the Genitive of the *Middle* Articles, and the Genitive of the *Indefinite,* when they are plac'd before Nouns taken in an Indeterminate, General, or Reſtricted Senſe; but *De* is always

an

an indefinite Article when it is before Nouns, that point out distinct and particular Objects, and distinguished by themselves from all others; as in *La bonté de Dieu*; God's Goodness. *Le livre de* Pierre; *Peter's* Book

On some Occasions the middle Articles, *Du, De la, Des* are supplied by others, and here is a general Rule, when it is to be done.

When the Substantive Nouns express'd in an indefinite Manner are without Adjectives; or, if the Adjective comes after them, they take always the Middle Articles, *du, de la, des,* with their oblique Cases; thus we say, *J'ai mangé, de la viande, ou, de la viande excellente*; I have eat Meat, or, excellent Meat. But if the Adjective goes before the Substantive, then *Du, De la, Des* are changed into *De* in the Nominative, Dative, and Accusative of both Numbers and Genders.

As in the Nominative, *De bon pain et de bonne Eau suffisent pour la Nouriture du corps humain*; Good Bread and good Water are sufficient for the Nourishment of the human Body. *De grandes evenemens et de grandes revolutions suivirent la mort de* Cæsar; Great Events and great Revolutions follow'd on *Cæsar's* Death.

In the Dative.

Les Gens de Guerre sont souvent reduits à de Mauvais pain, et à de Mauvaise viande; Military Men are often reduced to bad Bread and bad Meat, or Flesh. *Les Personnes destinées à de grands emplois doivent se preparer à de fach-*

euſes disgraces. Perſons deſign'd for great Employments ſhould prepare themſelves for, or lay their Account with, meeting with grievous Diſappointments.

In the Accuſative.

Pour bien ecrire il faut de bon Papier, et de bonne Encre; One muſt have good Paper and good Ink, in order to write well. *Un Diſcours n'eſt beau qu'autant qu'il contient de ſolides Raiſonnemens et de nobles Expreſſions*; A Diſcourſe is not valuable, but in ſo far as it contains ſolid Reaſonings and noble Expreſſions.

I have ſaid nothing of the Genitive or Ablative of the middle Articles in this laſt Rule, becauſe they are the ſame both for Expreſſion and Signification with thoſe of the Indefinite Articles, and they don't change, whether the Adjective go before or after the Subſtantive; thus we ſay indifferently, *Une Compagnie de braves ſoldats*; *ou, de ſoldats Courageux*; A Company of valiant Soldiers.

Articles are not placed before Nouns that ſpecify the Object, to whom the Perſon ſpeaking addreſſes his Diſcourſe; as, *Seigneur, ſecourez nous*; Lord, help us. Or, *Terre, Cieux, ecoutez ma voix*; Earth, Heavens, hear my Voice. Sometimes the Particle *O* is prefixt; as, *O Terre, O Cieux, O Infortuné!* O Earth, O Heavens, O unhappy Man! But this is only to expreſs ſome vehement Motion of the Soul, and anſwers to the Vocative Caſe of the *Latins*. Neither are they us'd in certain lively Ways of ſpeaking, where

where the Perſon ſeems ſo eager to expreſs his Thoughts, that he will not allow himſelf Time to name the Article; as, *Interêt, Conſcience, Honeur ſont ſacrifiés*; Intereſt, Conſcience, Honour are ſacrificed: Inſtead of *L'interêt, l'Honeur, la Conſcience*, &c.

Beſides theſe three Sorts of Articles, Grammarians admit a Fourth, *viz. Un*, and *Une*, whoſe three Caſes are,

Singular.

Maſculine.	Feminine.
1. No. *Un Prince,*	*Une Princeſſe.*
2. Ge. *D'un Prince,*	*D'une Princeſſe.*
3. Da. *à un Prince,*	*à une Princeſſe.*

Be it an Article or not, inſtead of diſputing, it is enough to ſay, that it is us'd as ſuch in theſe three Caſes; and in this Senſe it ſignifies an *Undetermin'd Unity*, which does not exclude a *Plurality*, but rather ſometimes ſuppoſes it, in marking what is proper to every Unity of the ſame Species; as, *Un livre ennuyeux eſt bon pour endormir*; A dull Book is apt to make one fall aſleep. This Expreſſion does not point out one ſingle Book, but rather ſuppoſes or points out every dull Book, and its Property.

At other Times it marks the numerical *Unity* in a particular *Object*, but in an indefinite and looſe manner, without indicating which is the particular Object; as, *J'ai rencontré un homme ce matin*; I met with a Man this Morning. *Un* is here employed in Place of the de-

finite Article, to design a particular Man without shewing precisely who the Man is, on whom that Distinction falls.

In order to distinguish *Un* an indefinite Article from *Un* a Noun of Number; observe, That when it is employed as a Noun of Number, it marks the *Numerical Unity* in a determinate Object, whereof it excludes the *Plurality*, but when it is employed as an indefinite Article, it signifies only an *indefinite Unity*, which does not positively exclude a *Plurality*; as, if I were asked, How many Men are in a Room; and I answer, *Il y en a un*; There is one. I design to have it understood by *Un*, the *Numerical Unity* exclusive of Plurality; that is, there is but one Man in the Room, and not several Men; whereas when I say, *Un Roy doit être le Pere de son Peuple*; A King should be the Father of his People. *Un* here only expresses an indefinite Unity, and does not exclude a Plurality; because I don't speak of one particular King, and what I say, may be applied to all Kings. Even so, when I say, *Un homme me l'aprit*; A Man told it me. The Unity express'd by *Un* is indeterminate, because my principal Object is not to shew, that only one Man told me it, but only that I was inform'd by some Body, no Matter by whom.

CHAP. II.

CHAP. II. *Of Nouns.*

THe Uſe of *Nouns* is to *name* Perſons, Things, or their Qualities, from whence ariſe Two Sorts of Nouns, *viz. Subſtantive* and *Adjective.*

A *Noun Subſtantive* ſignifies the Perſon or Thing themſelves; as, *Homme, Pierre, Ville, Edinbourg:* And a *Noun Adjective* ſignifies the Qualities of them; as, *Bon, Grand, Beau, Capital*; as, *Bon homme*; Good Man. Pierre *le grand*; *Peter* the Great. *Belle ville*; Fine City. Edinbourg *eſt la Capitale d'*Ecoſſe; *Edinburgh* is the Capital of *Scotland.*

A Noun Subſtantive is either *Common*, or *Proper.*

A Noun Subſtantive *Common* is applicable to every individual or ſingle Perſon, or Thing, of the ſame Kind; as, *Homme*; to all Men. *Ville*; to every Town.

A Noun Subſtantive *Proper* is only applicable to ſome, or one Perſon, or Thing of the ſame Kind; as, *Pierre*, is only ſaid of ſome Men; and *Edinbourg*, of one Town.

There are Seven Things to be conſider'd in a *Noun*; to wit, *Gender, Number, Caſe, Figure, Forming, Compariſon* and *Declenſion.*

---

§ 1. *Of*

§ 1. *Of Gender.*

Gender diſtinguiſhes one Sex from another, thus the Word, that ſignifies the *Male* Kind, is called a Noun of the *Maſculine* Gender; as, *Le Pere*; The Father. And the Word, that ſignifies the *Female* Kind, is called a Noun of the *Feminine* Gender; as, *La Mere*; The Mother. As to Things without Life, tho' they have neither Male nor Female, they are accounted ſo in a Metaphorical Senſe, and partake of theſe Two *Genders*.

As the diſtinguiſhing the *Genders* of Subſtantive Nouns is one of the greateſt Difficulties, to be met with, in attaining the *French* Language; our Grammarians have *wiſely paſt over* this neceſſary Part of *Grammar*, and remitted it to *Practice* and *Dictionaries*, for Reaſons pretty obvious: However I have attempted an *Alphabetical Table*, how to diſtinguiſh the *Gender* by their *Terminations*, which I have here ſet down; and which I flatter my ſelf will be found pretty exact, and ſo a very great Help to thoſe who are Proficients, as well as to Beginners.

The TABLE.

N. B. *The Termination in* E *is left laſt, becauſe moſt* Tedious *and* Difficult.

Termina. and Gender.	Exceptions.
A, B, C, D, are Maſculine.	
F, Maſculine.	*Clef, Nef, Soif.*
G, and I, Maſculine.	*Foi, Fourmi, Loi, Merci.*
L, and M, Maſculine.	*Faim.*
AIN, Maſculine	*Main, Nonain, Putain.*
IEN, Maſculine.	
IN, Maſculine.	*Fin.*

Termi-

Termina. and Gender.	Exceptions.
ON, Maſculine.	*Boiſſon, Chanſon, Cloiſon, Comparaiſon, Conjugaiſon, Cuiſſon, Declinaiſon, Demangaiſon, Echaufaiſon, Exhalaiſon, Façon, Gueriſon, Garniſon, Leçon, Liaiſon, Lunaiſon, Maiſon, Moiſſon, Oraiſon, Pamoiſon, Priſon, Raiſon, Rançon, Saiſon, Toiſon, Trahiſon, Venaiſon.*
ION, Feminine.	*Alcion, Alerion, Baſtion, Camion, Centurion, Champion, Crayon, Croupion, Décurion, Embrion, Eſpion, Gabion, Gallion, Million, Morion, Pion, Rayon, Scorpion, Septentrion, Tabellion, Tallion.*
O, P, Q, Maſculine.	*Jo,* a Nymph.
R, Maſcul. except EUR.	*Amour,* Natural Love; *Chair, Cour, Cuiller, Four, Mer.*
EUR, Feminine.	*Bonheur, Equateur, Exterieur, Honeur, Labeur, Lecteur, Malheur, Meilleur.* And all Nouns deriv'd from Verbs.
S, Maſculine.	*Beſicles, Brebis, Decimes, Epouſettes, Fois, Iris, Manieles, Moeurs, Paſſe-velours, Souris, Tenebres, Vertebres, Vis.*
T, Maſculine	*Dent, Dot, Forêt, Hart, Jument, Mort, Nuit, Part.*
U, Maſculine.	*Bru, Eau, Glu, Peau, Tribu, Vertu.*
Y, Z, Maſculine.	*Chaux, Croix, Faux,* a Sithe; *Noix, Paix, Perdrix, Poix, Toux, Voix.*

Termi-

Termina. and Gender.	Exceptions.
é, Feminine.	*Abregé, Benedicité, Clergé, Congé, Coté, Paté, Prejugé, Té.*
BE, Feminine.	*Adverbe, Aſtrolabe, Cube, Globe, Proverbe, Rombe, Tuorbe, Verbe.*
ACE,	*Space, Eſpace.*
ANCE,	*Romance.*
ENCE,	*Silence.*
OCE,	*Negoce, Sacerdoce.*
ERCE,	*Commerce, Seſterce.*
ORCE,	*Divorce,*
OURCE,	*Reſſource.*
OUCE,	*Pouce.*
UCE, Feminine.	*Prepuce.*
ICE, Maſculine.	*Avarice, Ecrivice, Epice, Immondice, Juſtice, Malice, Matrice, Milice, Police, Primice.*
DE, Feminine.	*Code, Coude, Druide, Epiſode, Exode, Exorde, Fratricide, Hommicide, Intermede, Monde, Monocorde, Parricide, Prelude, Remede, Romboide, Sinode, Subſide, Vuide.*
EE, Feminine.	*Athée, Caducée, Chaſſe-marée, Coliſée, Empirée, Hymenée, Mauſolée, Pigmée, Trophée.*
FE, Feminine.	*Golfe, Paraſe, Tartufe.*
GE, Maſculine.	*Alberge, Alonge, Aſperge, Auberge, Auge, Bauge, Charge, Décharge, Eponge, Fange, Frange, Gorge, Grange, Horploge, Jauge, Image, Litarge, Loge, Loſange, Louange,*

Marge,

Termina. and Gender.	Exceptions.
GE, Maſculine.	*Marge, Nage, Neige, Phalange, Plage, Rage, Sauge, Serge, Targe, Tige, Vandange, Verge, Vierge, Vuidange.*
CHE, PHE, Feminine.	*Acroſtiche, Coche, Dimanche, Hémiſtiche, Hierogliphe, Paragraphe, Porche, Prêche, Relache, Reproche, Stocfiche, Tourne-broche.*
AIE, IE, OIE, Feminine.	*Bain-marie, Foie, Genie, Incendie, Inſomnie,* according to the Pyſicians; *Meſſie, Parapluie, Pavie, Pou-de-ſoie.*
ALE, ELE, ILE, ILLE, OLE, ULE, Feminine.	*Alveole, Azile, Branle, Capitole, Chef-de-file, Chevre-feuille, Chile, Codicile, Concile, Contrôle, Crepuſcle, Crocodile, Cure-oreille, Dactile, Domicile, Evangile, Hale, Intervale, Libelle, Mâle, Manipule, Merle, Mille, Modèle, Module, Môle, Monopole, Opuſcule, Orle, Pécule, Perce-oreille, Pôle, Porte-feuille, Preambule, Protocole, Râle, Regale, Reptile, Rôle, Saule, Scandale, Scrupule, Serre-file, Simbole, Stile, Teſticule, Vaudeville, Vehicule, Ventricule, Veſtibule, Zele.*
BLE, CLE, GLE, Maſculine.	*Bible, Boucle, Epingle, Eſcarboucle, Etable, Fable, Hieble, Macle, Regle, Sangle, Table, Tringle.*
FLE, Feminine.	*Buſle, Girofle, Souſle, Treſle.*
ME, Maſculine.	*Alarme, Ame, Amertume, Anagrame, Apoſtume, Arme, Bergame, Berme, Breme, Chiourme, Cime, Corme, Coutume, Créme, Dime, Dragme, Ecume, Enclume, Enigme, Eſtime,*

Termina. and Gender.	Exceptions.
ME, Maſculine.	*Ferme, Flame, Forme, Game, Gomme, Gourme, Lame, Larme, Lime, Maxime, Oriflame, Palme, Paume, Plate-forme, Pomme, Quadrageſime, Quinquageſime, Reforme, Rime, Septuageſime, Sexageſime. Trame, Victime.*
NE, Feminine.	*Ane, Antimoine, Capricorne, Cerne, Chene, Cigne, Cone, Coturne, Crane, Domaine, Energumène, Faune, Filigrane, Frêne, Jeûne, Interregne, Moine, Octogone, Organe, Patrimoine, Peigne, Pentagone, Pêne, Phenomene, Pivoine, Poligone, Prône, Regne, Signe, Trône.*
PE, Feminine.	*Groupe, Jaſpe, Microſcope, Participe, Polype, Principe, Prototype.*
IRE, IERE, ARE, NRE, ORE, PRE, URE, Feminine.	*L'Augure, Beure, Centaure, Cimitiere, Delire, Derriere, Ellebore, Empire, Genre, Gruiere, Leure, Mercure, Navire, Pampre, Parjure, Phare, Pore, Porphire, Tintamare.*
BRE, CRE FRE, GRE, PHRE, TRE, VRE, Maſculine.	*Algebre, Ancre, Balaſre, Chambre, Chartre, Chevre, Couleuvre, Contre-lettre, Dartre, Emplatre, Epître, Fenêtre, Fibre, Fiévre, Gaufre, Guetre, Haute-contre, Huitre, Lettre, Levre, Martre, Mitre, Montre, Nacre, Ocre, Ombre, Patenotre, Poutre, Vitre.*
AIRE, ERRE, ERE, OIRE, Maſculine.	*Affaire, Artere, Armoire, Baignoire, Baſſinoire, Chaire, Chimere, Colere, Commere, Doloire, Dure-mere, Eclaire, Ecritoire, Ecumoire, Enchere, Eguerre, Foire, Fougere, Fourmillere, Galere, Genouillere, Gliſſoire,*

Gloire,

Termina. and Gender.	Exceptions.
AIRE, ERRE, ERE, OIRE, Maſculine.	*Gloire, Grammaire, Guerre, Haire, Hiſtoire, Lardoire, Machoire, Mangeoire, Mere, Nageoire, Oeillere, Paire, Paſſoire, Pantere, Perpendiculaire, Poire, Primeverre, Scorſonnere, Serre, Sphere, Victoire, Vipere.*
SE, Feminine.	*Dioceſe, Pegaſe, Tirſe, Vaſe.*
SSE, Feminine.	*Caroſſe, Coloſſe, Haut-de-chauſſe, Narciſſe, Parnaſſe.*
TE, Feminine.	*Acte, Antidote, Buſte, Caſſe-noiſette, Ceſte, Chocolate, Compte, Comte, Conte, Contraſte, Cu-de-jate, Culte, Digeſte, Doute, Eccleſiaſte, Extracte, Faſte, Faîte, Géſte, Gite, Holocauſte, Inſecte, Inceſte, Labirinte, Manifeſte, Mecompte, Merite, Mirte, Pacte, Porte-mouchette, Precepte, Pretexte, Reſte, Squelete, Térebinte, Tête-à-tête, Texte, Trente, Tumulte, Vicomte.*
QUE, Feminine.	*Cantique, Caſque, Catafalque, Cirque, Coloque Diſtique, Domeſtique, Emetique, Maſque, Obéliſque, Panegirique, Portique, Riſque, Tropique, Viatique, Zodiaque.*
VE, Feminine.	*Conclave, Eſclave, Fleuve, Glaive, Reve.*
XE, Maſculine.	*Annexe, Paralaxe, Sintaxe, Taxe.*

I have

I have only propos'd to account here for *Words* neceſſary in the *Practice* of the FRENCH *Language*; thus, I have omitted in the above *Exceptions* the *Names* of ſeveral *Foreign Animals* and *Plants*, and ſome *Terms* peculiar to certain *Arts* and *Sciences* which come very rarely into *Diſcourſe*.

Likewiſe, I have ſubjoin'd a TABLE of ſuch *Nouns* as vary their *Gender*, according to their different *Significations*.

Nouns that have doubl Significatior s	*Maſculine.*	*Feminine.*
BARBE,	A *Barbary*-Horſe.	The Beard.
CRAVATE,	A Sort of Trooper.	A Cravat.
CORNETTE.	An Officer of the Army.	A Woman's Cornet, *&c.*
ENSEIGNE,	An Officer of the Army.	A Sign for a Tavern, or Shop.
EXEMPLE,	Example, or Pattern.	A Copy to write after.
ECHO,	The Repetition of a Sound.	The Nymph *Echo*.
GARDE,	Keeper or Warden.	it is *Fem.* in all other Significations.
GREFFE,	Place where Regiſters are kept.	A Graft.
LIVRE,	A Book.	A Pound Weight, or a Piece of Silver worth 20 *Sols*.
MANCHE,	The Handle of an Inſtrument.	The Sleeve of a Coat, the *Britiſh* Chanel, the Wing of a Batalion or Squadron.

Nouns that have double Signification	*Masculine.*	*Feminine.*
MANOEUVRE.	A Labourer, or Mason's Man.	Tackling, or Working of a Ship, or Work.
MEMOIRE,	Memorandum, or Memoirs.	Memory.
MODE,	Term of Philosophy, or Grammar.	Custom, Fashion.
MOULE,	A Mould.	A Muscle, or Kind of Fish.
OFFICE,	An Office, or Charge.	A Buttry.
PAGE,	A Page to a Lady, *&c.*	The Page of a Book.
PARALLELE	Comparison.	A Line.
PENDULE,	The Pendulum of a Clock.	A Pendulum-Clock.
PERIODE,	A Space of Time, or the highest Degree of a Thing.	A Period in a Discourse, or the Revolution of a Planet.
PIQUE,	One of the four Suits at Cards.	A Sort of Arms.
POILE,	A Stove, or Pall.	A Frying-Pan.
POSTE,	A Post, Station, or Place.	A Post, or Post-house.
POURPRE,	A spotted Fever, or Colour.	A Sort of Die, or Mark of Dignity.
SATYRE,	A Satyr, or Demi-god.	A Satyr, or Lampoon.
SAUVE-GARDE.	A Safeguard, or Trooper for Security of a Place.	Letters of Protection.
TEMPLE,	A Place for Divine Worship.	The Temple, a Part of the Head.
VOILE,	A Vail for Women.	The Sail of a Ship.

N. B. There

N. B. There are ſeveral *Nouns* of both Genders; ſuch as, *Aigle, Enfant, &c, Bronze, Caque, Cloaque, Loutre, Epitalame, Evangile, Comte, Duché,* are oftner *Maſculine* than *Feminine. Couple, Epitaphe, Foudre, Hymne, Alcove,* are rather *Feminine.*

§ 2. *Of Number.*

Number ſheweth the Difference between one and many; from whence ariſe two Numbers in *Nouns,* called the *Singular* and *Plural.* The *Singular* ſpeaks of *one*; as, *Le Roi*; The King. And the *Plural* of *many*; as, *Les Rois*; The Kings. The Plural is form'd of the Singular, by adding an *S,* except Nouns ending in *S, X,* or *Z,* which have the ſame Termination in Singular and Plural. Alſo theſe ending in *Au, Eu,* and *Ou,* which take *X* in their Plural, and thoſe in *Al* and *Ail,* which they change into *Aux* in their Plural; but *Bal, Bocal, Fanal, Fatal, Naval, Poitral, Paſchal,* and *Evantail,* take *S,* according to the general Rule.

Nouns in *L,* change *L* into *S*; except Monoſyllables, *Aieul, Ciel, Loi, Oeil, Vieil,* have *Aieux, Cieux, Loix, Yeux,* and *Vieux* for their Plurals; yet we ſay, *Ciels de lit, Ciels d'un Tableau.*

Some Nouns are only us'd in the Singular; as, *Paix, Or, Argent, Faim, Soif,* and others only in the Plural; as, *Pleurs, Vepres, Tenebres.*

§. 3. *Of the Caſe.*

Caſe ſhews the different Senſes the ſame Noun or Pronoun is taken in; as for Example, Jean *parle*; *John* ſpeaks. *Je parle de* Jean; I ſpeak of *John*. *Je parle à* Jean; I ſpeak to *John*. *Je prie* Jean; I entreat *John*. Jean *venez-ici*; *John*, or, O *John*, come hither. Now *John* or *Jean*, being put in theſe different *Caſes*, has a different Senſe in each of them.

Six *Caſes* are commonly reckon'd, *viz.* The *Nominative*, *Genitive*, *Dative*, *Accuſative*, *Vocative* and *Ablative*; tho', properly ſpeaking, there are but Five in *French*, the ſame Article ſerving both for the *Genitive* and *Ablative*.

The *Nominative* is the *Doer* or *Sufferer* of the Action, it goes before the Verb, except in a Queſtion, and is known by the Articles, *le*, *la*, or, *l'* for the Singular; and *les*, for the Plural.

The *Genitive* ſignifies the *Poſſeſſor*, or *Cauſe* of the Action; and the *Ablative* the *Perſon*, or *Thing* taken or removed from another, and are known by the Articles, *Du*, *De la*; and *De* for the Singular; and *Des* or *de* for the Plural.

The *Dative* ſignifies the *Acquirer* of the Action, and is known by the Articles, *Au*, *à la*, *à*, for the Singular; *aux*, and *à* for the Plural; or, by a Conjunctive Pronoun in the *Dative* Caſe for either.

The *Accuſative* denotes the *Receiver* of the Action, and goes after the Verb, and anſwereth to the Queſtion, *Who*, or, *What*.

The

The *Vocative* denotes the Perſon or Thing *called to the Action*, either by expreſſing the Particle *O*, or by ſuppreſſing it.

§ 4. *Of Figure.*

Figure ſheweth the Difference of Words of the ſame Kind, whether they be *Primitives*, or *Derivatives*, *Simples*, or *Compounds*, *Collectives*, or *Diminutives*.

A Primitive is a Word, of which another, or many are deriv'd; as, *Pate*; Dough. *Don*; Gift. *Terre*; Earth.

A Derivative is a Word derived of another; as, *Paté*; Paſty; And *Patiſſier*; Paſtry-Cook, of *Pate*. *Donner*; to give, of *Don*. *Terreſtre*; Earthly, of *Terre*.

A Simple Noun is that which conſiſts of one ſingle Word; as, *Puiſſance*; Might. *Heureux*; Happy.

A Compound conſiſts of two or more ſingle Words; as, *Toute-puiſſance*; Almightineſs. *Malheureux*; Unhappy. *Arc-en-ciel*; Rain-bow.

A Collective Noun is a Subſtantive, ſignifying a *Multitude in the Singular*; as, *Le Peuple*; The People. *L'Armée*; The Army.

A Diminutive is a Derivative that leſſens the Signification of its Primitive; as, *Roitelet*; Petty King, of *Roi*. *Pigeonneau*; A young Pidgeon, of *Pigeon*. *Perdreau*; A young Partridge, of *Perdrix*. *Lapereau*; A young Rabbet, of *Lapin*.

§ 5. *Of Forming.*

Forming ſheweth how a Noun is *form'd* of another; a Subſtantive Noun ending with *d*, *i*, *in*, *er*, *s*, or, *t*, forms its Feminine, by adding an *e* Feminine; as, *Marchand*; A Merchant: *Marchande*; A Merchant's Wife. *Ami*; A Friend: *Amie*; A She-friend. *Medecin*; A Phyſician: *Medecine*; A Phyſician's Wife. *Ecoſſois*; A *Scots* Man: *Ecoſſoiſe*; A *Scots* Woman. *Conſeiller*; A Counſellor: *Conſeillere*, A Counſellor's Wife. *Chat*; A Boar Cat; *Chate*; A She-Cat.

But, if it ends in *ien*, or, *on*, then the Feminine is formed by adding *ne*; as, *Chien*; A Dog: *Chienne*; A Bitch. *Baron*; A Baron: *Baronne*; A Baroneſs. *Lion*; A Lyon: *Lionne*; A Lyoneſs.

Adjectives Maſculine ending in *d*, *é*, *i*, *l*, *in*, *er*, *s*, *t*, *u*, form their Feminine, by adding *e* Feminine; as, *Grand*, *Grande*; Great. *Aiſé*, *Aiſée*; Eaſy. *Joli*, *Jolie*; Pretty. *Civil*, *Civile*; Civil. *Fin*, *Fine*; Cunning. *Leger*, *Legere*; Light. *Gris*, *Griſe*; Gray. *Conſtant*, *Conſtante*; Conſtant. *Menu*, *Menue*; Thin.

But Adjectives in *Eau* form their Feminine in *elle*; as, *Beau*, *Belle*; Handſom. *Nouveau*, *Nouvelle*; New. Theſe Adjectives have *bel* and *Nouvel* in the Maſculine before a Subſtantive beginning with a Vowel; or, *H mute*; as, *Un bel Enfant*; A fine Child. *Un bel Homme*; A hand-

A handſom Man. *Le nouvel An*; The new Year.

Adjectives in *ou* change the *u* into *le* in the Feminine; as, *fou, folle*; fooliſh. Thoſe in *c* add *he* to their Feminine; as, *Blanc, Blanche*; White. But, *Public, Turc, Grec*, form their Feminine by *Que*; as, *Publique*, &c.

Adjectives in *F* form their Feminine by changing the *F* into *ve*; as, *Bref, Breve*; Short. *Neuf, Neuve*; New.

Adjectives ending in *x* and *eur* form their Feminine by changing the final *x* or *r* into *ſe*; as, *Heureux, Heureuſe*; Happy. *Menteur, Menteuſe*; A Liar. But *Doux*; Sweet: *Roux*; Red, have *Douce* and *Rouſſe*: *Faux, Fauſſe*; Falſe. *Prefix*; Prefixt: *Prefixe*. And *Vieux*; Old: *Vieille*, in their Feminines.

Laſtly, The Termination of *Engliſh* Words borrow'd from Foreign Languages, are thus changed, in order to form them into *French* Words.

An into *en*; as, Grammarian, *Grammarien*.

Ancy into *ance*; as, Conſtancy, *Conſtance*.

Ary into *aire*; as, Ordinary, *Ordinaire*.

Ick into *que*,; as, Eccleſiaſtick, *Eccleſiaſtique*.

Cal into *que*; as, Political, *Politique*.

Ed into *é, i*, or *u*; as, Honoured, *Honoré*: Puniſhed, *Puni*: Clothed, *Vêtu*.

Ing into *ant*; as, Speaking, *Parlant*: Finiſhing, *Finiſſant*.

Th in Adjectives of Order into *ieme*; as, Tenth, *Dixième*.

Ty into *té*; as, Majeſty, *Majeſté:* Bounty, *Bonté.*

Ly into *ment*; as, Juſtly, *Juſtement:* Prudently, *Prudemment.*

Us into *e*; as, Titus, *Tite:* Democritus, *Democrite.*

O into *on*; as, Cicero, *Ciceron:* Juno, *Junon.*

Ory into *Oire*; as, Territory, *Territoire:* Oratory, *Oratoire.*

§ 6. *Of Compariſon.*

Compariſon ſhews the different *Participation*, or *Poſſeſſion* of a Quality; and ſince a Quality may be participate, or, poſſeſs'd in three different Manners; to wit, *Simply*, in a *greater*, or in the *greateſt Meaſure*; hence ariſe Three Degrees of Compariſon in an Adjective, called, The *Poſitive*, *Comparative* and *Superlative.*

Adjective Nouns and Adverbs are only capable of the *Degrees* of Compariſon; becauſe *they only* expreſs Qualities, and only Qualities, or Manners of exiſting, are capable of *more*, or *leſs*, by which Things or Subſtances can be compar'd with one another; thus, we cannot ſay, *Une Table eſt plus Table, qu'une autre*; A Table is more a Table than another. But we can ſay, *Une Table eſt plus grande, plus haute, plus belle, qu'une autre*; A Table is greater, higher, or more beautiful than another. And thus they are call'd *Degrees* of *Compariſon*, becauſe we cannot know, that a Perſon or Thing

Thing has more or leſs Perfection, but by comparing either with another.

The *Poſitive* repreſents the Quality of the Perſon or Thing without any *Exceſs*; as, *Beau*, or *Belle*; Fine, or Beautiful: *Grand*, *Grande*; Great: *Habile*; Able, or Silful; are poſitive Adjectives. And *Sagement*, Wiſely; *Prudemment*, Prudently; *Courageuſement*, Couragiouſly; are poſitive Adverbs. The *Poſitive* is not properly a Degree of Compariſon, ſince it only expreſſes the Quality ſimply; but it is call'd the Firſt, becauſe it is as the Baſe, and Origin of the other.

The *Comparative* is a manner of expreſſing a Perſon or Thing compar'd with another, by a Quality *common to both*, or, by *different Qualities*; and there are Three Kinds of *Compariſons*,

(1.) The *Comparative* of *Equality*, which is form'd by placing the Words, *Auſſi*, *Autant*, or, *Si*, before the Adjectives and Adverbs; as, Auſſi *ſavant*; As learn'd: Autant *habile*; As able, or, skilful: Auſſi *geneureuſement*; As generouſly: Auſſi *fidellement*; As faithfully: Si *parfait*; ſo perfect.

(2.) The *Comparative* of *Exceſs*, which is form'd by putting the Word, *Plus* before the Adjectives and Adverbs; as, Plus *ſage*; Wiſer: Plus *habile*; More skilful, or abler: Plus *geneureſement*; More generouſly: Plus *fidelle-ment*; More faithfully.

(3.) The

(3.) The *Comparative* of *Defect*, which is form'd by putting the Word *Moins*, before the Adjectives and Adverbs; as, Moins *ſage*; Leſs wiſe: Moins *habile*; Leſs skilful: Moins *genereuſement*; Leſs generouſly: Moins *fidellement*; Leſs faithfully.

There are but Three Comparative Nouns in *French*; to wit, *Meilleur*; Better: *Pire*; Worſe: *Moindre*; Leſs. The other Adjectives do not expreſs the Compariſon by themſelves, but by ſome Articles, which go before them; ſuch as, *Mieux*, or, *Plus*, for heightening the Quality, *Moins*, and *Si*, for leſſening; and *Auſſi*, *Autant*, and ſome other Conjunction, for Comparatives of Equality.

Practice does not allow *Plus Bon*, this Adjective muſt have *Meilleur* for its Comparative, and *le Meilleur* for its Superlative; *Mechant*, Bad; and *Mauvais*, Ill, may take *Pire*, and *le Pire*; and *Petit*, Little; *Moindre*, and *le moindre* for their Comparative and Superlatives, or uſe any of the other Articles.

It is to be obſerv'd, That when a Perſon or Thing is compar'd with another, there are always Two *Terms*; the Perſon or Thing *compar'd*; and that, to which they *are compar'd*: And theſe Terms are always connected by the Conjunction, *Que*; as, Alexandre *etoit moins prudent, que* Céſar; *Alexander* was leſs, or not ſo prudent, as *Cæſar*.

There are Comparatives without expreſſing the *oppoſite Term*, and when theſe are follow-

ed

ed by a Verb not in the Infinitive, and without a Preposition, the Verb must have *Ne* before it, as, *Il est plus sage, qu'on ne Croioit*; He is wiser than People fancied. But, if it have a Conjunction before it, or, if it be in the Infinitive with a Preposition, *Ne* may be omitted, as, *Ce cheval est moins beau que quand on l'acheta*; That Horse is less beautiful than when he was bought. *Il est plus heureux que de Regner*; He is happier than a King.

The *Superlative* is a Way of expressing the *Supreme*, or, *highest Degree* of a Quality; and there are two Kinds of Superlatives, the *Absolute* and the *Relative*.

The Absolute expresses the Supreme Degree of the Quality in an *absolute Manner*, without Regard to any other Person or Thing; and this is done, by putting *Très*, or *Fort*, before the Adjective Nouns and Adverbs; as, when I say, Ciceron *etoit* très-*Eloquent*; *Cicero* was most Eloquent. *Votre Procedé est* fort *honête*; Your Behaviour is most obliging. *Vous ecrivez* fort *poliment*; You write most politely. Pierre *s'est conduit* fort *sagement*; *Peter* has behaved most prudently. In these Examples you see the Adjective is put in the Supreme Degree, without Reference to any other Thing.

The Relative Superlative expresses the Supreme Degree of the Quality, *with a Reference of Comparison*, with other Persons or Things; and it is us'd by putting before the Adjective Nouns and Adverbs, the Word *Plus* preceded

by

by the Definite Article *Le* or *La*; as when I ſay, Alexandre *etoit* le plus *brave des Hommes*; *Alexander* was the braveſt of Men. *Ma Soeur eſt* la plus *heureuſe des Femmes*; My Siſter is the happieſt of Women. *Vous avez agi* le plus *ſagement de tous vos Camerades*; You have acted the moſt wiſely of all your Comrades. You obſerve in theſe Examples, that the Adjective, put in the Supreme Degree, has a Relation of Compariſon with a Second Term, which may not ſometime be expreſt; as if I ſhould ſay, *Il y a trente Ecoliers en Rhetorique, mon Frere eſt* le plus *habile*; There are thirty Scholars in Rhetorick, my Brother is the beſt: That is, Le plus *habile des trente Ecoliers*; The beſt of the thirty Scholars.

The ſecond Term of the Superlative is always in the Genitive, when it is a Noun, as in the foregoing Examples; if the Superlative be follow'd by a Verb, the Pronouns *Que* or *Qui* muſt be plac'd betwixt them, and the Verb in the Subjunctive; as, *C'eſt le plus habile Homme que je connoiſſe*; He is the moſt ingenious Man I know; *La* France *eſt le plus beau Royaume qui ſoit en* Europe; *France* is the fineſt Kingdom in *Europe*.

§ 7. *Of Declenſion.*

Declenſion is the *changing* of the *Termination* of a Noun through all its *Caſes*; but as there is no Variation of the Termination of *French* Nouns, in their different Caſes, from their Nomina-

Nominatives Singular and Plural, there is, properly ſpeaking, no Declenſion of *French* Nouns; yet, becauſe the different Caſes of Nouns are known by the *Variation* of the *Article* that goes before them, they may be ſaid, tho' improperly, to be declin'd.

The Declenſion of Nouns will be very eaſy, if the following Rules be obſerv'd.

(1.) When the Nominative has the Article before it; Or, When you are to expreſs, *of the*, *by the*, *with the*, *from the*, or, *to the*, you are to decline with the *Definite Articles*.

(2.) When the Nominative wants the Article; Or, When you are to expreſs, *of*, *by*, *with*, *from*, or *to*, without *the*, you are to decline with the *Indefinite Articles*.

(3.) When Perſons or Things are ſpoken of indefinitely; When we deſign to reſtrict the Signification of a Noun; Or, When we ſpeak of a Part of a Thing, and that Part retains the Name of the whole Species, then you are to decline with the *Middle* or *Partitive Articles*. I ſhall give Examples of all.

The Caſes or Declenſion of NOUNS.

Examples of the *Definite* Articles.

	Maſculine.		Feminine.	
	Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
No.	*le Vice,*	*les Vices,*	*la Vertu,*	*les Vertus.*
Ge.	*du Vice,*	*des Vices,*	*de la Vertu,*	*des Vertus.*
Da.	*au Vice,*	*aux Vices,*	*à la Vertu,*	*aux Vertus.*

Maſcu-

	Maſculine.		Feminine.	
	Singular.	Plural.	Theſe Six have no Plural.	
No.	*le Ciel,*	*les Cieux,*	*la Nature,*	*la Gloire.*
Ge.	*du Ciel,*	*des Cieux,*	*de la Nature,*	*de la Gloire.*
Da.	*au Ciel,*	*aux Cieux,*	*à la Nature,*	*à la Gloire,*
No.	*l'Orgueil,*	*l'Hymen,*	*l'Eſperance,*	*l'Humilité*
Ge.	*de l'Orgueil,*	*de l'Hymen,*	*de l'Eſperance,*	*de l'Humilité*
Da.	*à l'Orgueil,*	*à l'Hymen,*	*à l'Eſperance,*	*à l'Humilité,*

Theſe, and ſuch like, as have the Article before their Nominative, muſt be declin'd with the Definite Article, tho' the Word *the* be not expreſs'd in either of their Caſes; and the ſame Rule takes place in Pronouns, that have the Article before them.

	Maſculine.		Feminine.	
	Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
No.	*le Roy,*	*les Rois,*	*la Reine,*	*les Reines.*
Ge.	*du Roy,*	*des Rois,*	*de la Reine,*	*des Reines.*
Da.	*au Roy,*	*aux Rois,*	*à la Reine,*	*aux Reines.*
No.	*l'Ange,*	*les Anges,*	*l'Etoile,*	*les Etoiles.*
Ge.	*de l'Ange,*	*des Anges,*	*de l'Etoile,*	*des Etoiles.*
Da.	*à l'Ange,*	*aux Anges,*	*à l'Etoile,*	*aux Etoiles.*
No.	*l'Homme,*	*les Hommes,*	*l'Humeur,*	*les Humeurs.*
Ge.	*de l'Homme,*	*des Hommes,*	*de l'Humeur,*	*des Humeurs.*
Da.	*à l'Homme,*	*aux Hommes,*	*à l'Humeur,*	*aux Humeurs.*

Theſe, and ſuch like, muſt all be declin'd with the Definite Article, becauſe they have both *the Article,* and the Word (*the*) is expreſſed in all their Caſes.

Example

Examples of the *Indefinite* Articles.

	Maſculine.		Feminine.	
	Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
No.	*Drap,*	*Draps,*	*Couleur,*	*Couleurs.*
Ge.	*de Drap,*	*de Draps,*	*de Couleur,*	*de Couleurs.*
Da.	*à Drap,*	*à Draps,*	*à Couleur,*	*à Couleurs.*
No.	*Ami,*	*Amis,*	*Egliſe,*	*Egliſes.*
Ge.	*d'Ami,*	*d'Amis,*	*d'Egliſe,*	*d'Egliſes.*
Da.	*à Ami,*	*à Amis,*	*à Egliſe,*	*à Egliſes.*
No.	*Hopital,*	*Hopitals,*	*Hauteur,*	*Hauteurs.*
Ge.	*d'Hopital,*	*d'Hopitals,*	*d'Hauteur,*	*d'Hauteurs.*
Da.	*à Hopital,*	*à Hopitals,*	*à Hauteur,*	*à Hauteurs.*

Here the Indefinite Article is us'd, becauſe *Cloth, Colour, Friend, Church, Hoſpital,* and *Height,* are ſpoken of in a General and Indefinite Senſe, without condeſcending on any particular Kind of either.

No.	*Dieu,*	*Céſar,*	*Jacques,*	*Marie.*
Ge.	*de Dieu,*	*de Céſar,*	*de Jacques,*	*de Marie.*
Da.	*à Dieu,*	*à Céſar,*	*à Jacques,*	*à Marie.*

No.	*Ecoſſe,*	*Hongrie,*	*Anne,*	*Henri,*	*Henriette.*
Ge.	*d'Ecoſſe,*	*d'Hongrie,*	*d'Anne,*	*d'Henri,*	*d'Henriette.*
Da.	*à Ecoſſe,*	*à Hongrie,*	*à Anne,*	*à Henri,*	*à Henriette.*

Theſe, and ſuch like Nouns, mark a Diſtinction ſo preciſe of themſelves, that they need not the *Definite* Article to point it out.

Examples

Examples of the *Middle* Articles.

No. *du Vin, de la Viande, de l'Orge, des Medecins, de bons Medecins.*

Ge. *de Vin, de Viande, d'Orge, de Medecins, de bons Medecins*

Da. *à du Vin, à de la Viande, à de l'Orge, à des Medecins, à de bons Medecins.*

The *Middle* Article is here us'd, becauſe *Vin, Viande, Orge,* and *Medecins,* are us'd in a *limited* and *reſtricted* Senſe.

CHAP. III. *Of Pronouns.*

A *Pronoun* is a Word us'd to avoid the Repetition of Nouns; as, The Righteous love God, becauſe he is good; *Les juſtes aiment Dieu, parce qu'il eſt bon:* Where the Word, He, *Il,* is us'd to avoid the Repetition of the Noun, God, *Dieu.*

There are Six Sorts of *Pronouns,* to wit, *Perſonal, Poſſeſſive, Abſolute, Demonſtrative, Relative,* and *Indefinite*; all which have *Gender, Number, Figure,* and *Forming,* like Nouns.

Perſonal Pronouns ſignify a Perſon in a poſitive and definite manner; as, *Moi,* Me. They are divided into *Primitive,* or, *Disjunctive,* and *Conjunctive.* The *Disjunctive* are ſo called, becauſe they may be us'd ſingly, and without a *Verb,* and have their Three Caſes diſtinguiſhed by the Indefinite Article, like Nouns.

The

The Conjunctives are always joyn'd to Verbs, nor can they be govern'd by any other Part of Speech. I have ſubjoyn'd a TABLE of both, diſtinguiſhing the *Diſjoints* from the *Conjoints*. Thoſe that are mark'd with an * *Aſteriſm*, are both Disjunctive and Conjunctive; and it muſt be obſerv'd, that the Conjuncts have no Genitive.

§ 1. *Of the Perſonal Pronouns.*

The Firſt Perſon.

	Singular.		Plural.	
	Disjunct.	Conjunct.	Disjunct.	Conjunct.
No.	*Moi,*	*Je,* Me, *or* I.	* *Nous,*	* *Nous,* We.
Ge.	*de Moi,* of, from, by *or* with Me.		*de Nous,* of, *&c.*	Us.
Da.	*à Moi,*	*Moi* or *Me,* to Me.	*à Nous,*	*Nous,* to Us.
Ac.	*Moi,*	*Me,* Me.	* *Nous,*	* *Nous,* Us.

The Second Perſon.

No.	*Toi,*	*Tu,* Thou.	* *Vous,*	* *Vous,* You.
Ge.	*de Toi,* of, from, by, *or* with Thee.		*de Vous,* of, *&c.*	You.
Da.	*à Toi,*	*Toi* or *Te,* to Thee.	*à Vous,*	*Vous,* to You.
Ac.	*Toi,*	*Te,* Thee.	* *Vous,*	* *Vous,* You.

The Third Perſon Maſculine.

No.	*Lui,*	*Il,* He *or* It.	*Eux,*	*Ils,* They.
Ge.	*de Lui,* of, from, by *or* with Him.		*d'Eux,* of, *&c.*	Them.
Da.	*à Lui,*	*Lui,* to Him.	*à Eux,*	*Leur,* to Them.
Ac.	*Lui,*	*Le,* Him.	*Eux,*	*Les,* Them.

The Third Perſon Feminine.

No.	* *Elle,*	* *Elle,* She *or* It.	* *Elles,*	* *Elles,* They.
Ge.	*d'Elle,* of, from, by *or* with Her.		*d'Elles,* of, *&c.*	Them.
Da.	*à Elle,*	*Lui,* to Her.	*à Elles,*	*Leur,* to Them.
Ac.	*Elle,*	*La,* Her.	*Elles,*	*Les,* Them.

The Third Perſon Indefinite.

	Disjunctive.		Conjunctive.	
No.	*Soi,*	ones Self, it, one, *&c.*	*On,*	One, I, you, *&c.*
Ge.	*de Soi,*	of ones Self, *or* its Self.		have no Plural.
Da.	*à Soi,*	to ones Self, *&c.*	*Se,*	
Ac.	*Soi,*	ones Self, *&c.*	*Se,*	

The Third Perſon Supplying *and* Govern'd.

No.	*Le,* He, She, *or* It.	*Les,* They.
Ge.	*En,* of Him, *&c.*	
Da.	*Y,* to It, *&c.*	

This laſt is a Conjunctive Pronoun, becauſe it is always joyn'd with a Verb, and never in the Nominative of, but always govern'd by it.

The Compounds of the Perſonal Disjunctive Pronouns, ſuch as, *Moi-même,* My ſelf; *Toi-même,* Thy ſelf; *Lui-même,* Himſelf; *Elle-même,* Her ſelf; *Soi-même,* Ones ſelf; are declin'd as their Simples.

§ 2. *Of the Poſſeſſive Pronouns.*

They are ſo called, becauſe they betoken the *Poſſeſſion* of a Thing; they are pure Adjectives, differing nothing from the others, but by ſome particular Inflections, and by the Relation they bear to Perſonal Pronouns, from which they are deriv'd. They are Six in Number, *viz. Mon,* Maſc. *ma,* Fem. *Mes,* Plural; My: *Ton, Ta, Tes*; Thy: *Son, Sa, Ses*; His, or her: *Notre, Nos,* Plural; Our: *Votre, Vos,* Plural; Your: *Leur, Leurs,* Plural; Their:

And are declin'd by the *Indefinite Articles*, *De* and *A*. But obſerve, *Mon*, *Ton*, *Son*, are us'd before Feminine Nouns beginning with a *Vowel*, or an *H* mute, inſtead of *Ma*, *Ta*, *Sa*, to avoid an unſeemly Opening of the Mouth: Thus we ſay, *Mon Ame*; *Ton Epée*; *Son Hôteſſe*; and not, *Ma Ame*, &c.

§ 3. *Of the Abſolute Pronouns.*

They are ſo called, becauſe not being joyn'd with their Subſtantives, they *ſuppoſe* it before expreſs'd, and *relate* to it. There are Six of them, *Le mien*, *Le tien*, *Le ſien*; Mine, thine, his, or, hers, Maſc. Singular: *La mienne*, *la Tienne*, *la Sienne*, Fem. Singular. Their Plurals are, *Les Miens*, *les Tiens*, *les Siens*, Maſc. And *Les Miennes*, *les Tiennes*, *les Siennes*, Fem. *Le Nôtre*, *le vôtre*, *le leur*; Ours, yours, theirs, Maſculine: *La nôtre*, *la vôtre*, *la leur*, Fem. And their Plurals, *Les nôtres*, *les vôtres*, *les leurs*, both for Maſculine and Feminine. They are declin'd by the *definite Articles*, *Du*, *de la*, *au*, and *à la*, for the Singular; and for their Plurals, by *Les*, *des*, and *aux*.

§ 4. *Of the Demonſtrative Pronouns.*

They are ſo called, becauſe they ſerve to *demonſtrate*, or point out the Perſon or Thing ſpoken of. They are all compounded of the Primitive, *Ce*, or, *Cet*; This, or, that, Maſculine: Which has *Cette* for its Fem. and *Ces* for its Plural: They are *Celui*, Maſc. *Celle*, Fem.

He, She, or, the Perſon, or, Thing ſpoken of; whoſe Plurals are, *Ceux*, and *Celles*. *Ceci*; This Thing: *Cela*; That Thing. Theſe Two have Plurals. *Ce* is put before a Maſculine Noun, beginning with a Conſonant, and *Cet* before a Noun of the ſame Gender, beginning with a *Vowel*, or *H* mute.

Sometimes *Celui* and *Celle* take the Particles *ci* and *là* after them, the Firſt to denote an Object near; the other an Object at ſome Diſtance. All theſe Pronouns are declin'd by *De* and *à*.

§ 5. *Of the Relative and Interrogative Pronouns.*

The *Relative* Pronouns are ſo nam'd, becauſe they relate to a Subſtantive expreſs'd, or underſtood. They are *Qui*, Who; *Quoi*, What; and *Lequel*, Which, Maſc. *Laquelle* Fem. *Qui* and *Quoi* are declin'd by *De* and *à*, and are of both Genders and Numbers. But the Accuſative of *Qui* is *Que*, or *Qui*, which laſt is only us'd on two Occaſions, *viz.* (1.) When the Noun or Pronoun, to which it is joyn'd, is underſtood; as, *Je prierai, qui vous voudrez*. I ſhall pray, whom you incline; that is, the Perſon whom you incline. And (2.) In Interrogations, *Qui Cherchez-vous?* Who do you look for? *Lequel* is declin'd by the definite Article.

Inſtead of the Genitives of theſe Three Pronouns, *Dont* is often elegantly us'd, and ſerves equally well for both Genders and Numbers.

The Particle *Où* often ſupplies the Place of theſe Pronouns, when they may have the Prepoſitions *Dans* or *En* before them; as inſtead of, *Voila une Affaire* dans laquelle *je ne veux point entrer*; There's an Affair wherein I will have no Concern: It may be elegantly expreſs'd thus, *Voila une Affaire où je ne veux point entrer*; and *C'eſt le but* où *il tend*; This is the Point he aims at; inſtead of, *Auquel il tend.*

The ſame Pronouns are us'd in Interrogations, except *Dont*, which is never Interrogative. *Que* is us'd in the Nominative, as well as in the Accuſative, in Interrogations. *Quel* us'd interrogatively, and declin'd with the *Indefinite Article*, muſt be follow'd by a Noun; or, the Noun it refers to, muſt be mention'd before; and if it be declin'd with the *Definite Article*, the Noun muſt be in the Genitive, or expreſs'd before.

§ 6. *Of the Indefinite Pronouns.*

They are ſo nam'd, becauſe they ſignify Perſons or Things in a *general* and *unlimited* Senſe, without determining in Particular either one or the other. They are Twenty one in Number, *viz.* *Quiconque*, whoſoever; *Quoique ſe ſoit*, *Quel que ſe ſoit*, *Quelle que ſe ſoit*, *Quelconque*, whatſoever; *Aucun*, *Aucune*, any or no Body; *Quelque*, ſome; *Quelqu'un*, *Quelqu'une*, ſome Body; *Chaque*, every; *Chacun*, *Chacune*, each one; *l'Un*, *l'Une*, one; *l'Autre*, the other; *Tel*, *Telle*, ſuch; *Tout*, *Toute*, all;

Certain, *Certaine*, certain; *Pluſieurs*, many or ſeverals; *Peu*, few; *Pas-un*, *Pas-une*, not one; *Nul*, *Nulle*, none; *Perſonne*, no Body; *Le tout*, the Whole; *Le même*, *La même*, the ſame. Theſe are all declin'd by *de* and *à*, except the two laſt, which take the *Definite Article*.

CHAP. IV. *Of Verbs.*

IN order to comprehend the *Nature* of a *Verb*, and to give an exact Definition of it, it muſt be obſerv'd, That, in every Thing that is ſaid to expreſs our Thoughts, there is a *Subject* of which we ſpeak, for to *affirm* ſomething about it; as when I ſay, *La vertu eſt aimable*, Virtue is the Subject whereof I affirm that is, is amiable: Alſo, when I ſay, *Dieu aime les Hommes*, GOD is the Subject whereof I affirm, that he loves Men.

A Verb is then a Word which we make uſe of, in order *to affirm* ſomething about *a Subject*. This Definition will even hold in Negations, becauſe *to deny*, is to affirm that a Thing is not.

By a Subject I underſtand a *Perſon*, or a *Thing*, to which whatever is affirm'd, has a *Relation*; and to expreſs it, a Subſtantive *Noun* or a *Pronoun*, in the Nominative Caſe, is always made uſe of, which makes the Subject alſo to be called the *Nominative of the Verb*.

And what it affirms of the Subject, is called a *Propoſition*, or *Phraſe*; as, *Dieu eſt juſte*; *il punira les Mechans*, are two Phraſes, or Propoſitions

ſitions. In the firſt, GOD is the Subject, or Nominative of the Verb, that is, the Perſon to whom the Affirmation, *He is juſt*, relates. *Is* is the Verb that expreſſes this Affirmation. It is true, that if I ſaid only, *Dieu juſte*, I could conceive GOD as juſt; and this would then be a ſimple Object of my Thought; but I would not affirm, that he *is juſt*, unleſs I joyn'd the Word *is* to *il*; as when I ſay, GOD is juſt.

In the ſecond Phraſe, *Il punira les Mechans*, *He*, which is a Perſonal Pronoun put in place of GOD, is the Subject, or Nominative of the Verb, that is, the Perſon on whom the Affirmative falls; and, *ſhall puniſh*, is the Verb by which I affirm of GOD, that he will puniſh the Wicked.

The *Verb* is then a Word, which is us'd in order to affirm ſomething of a Subject. Now we can affirm of a Subject, what *it is*, and what *it does*; conſequently there ariſes from thence two general *Species* or *Kinds* of Verbs. What a *Subject is*, is ordinarily expreſs'd by the Verb, *être*, to be; which is called a *Subſtantive* Verb and which joyns to the Subject, by way of Affirmation, what the Mind figures to it ſelf may agree with it; as, when I ſay, *La Terre eſt ronde*, the Verb *is* joyns to the *Earth* the Quality of being *round*; which my Mind imagin'd was a Property of it.

What a Subject does is ordinarily expreſſed by a Verb that is called *Active*, becauſe it de-

notes an Action; as when I ſay, *J'Aime*, *je Travaille*; this is, as if I ſaid, I perform the *Action* of *Loving*, or *Working*.

Now ſince an Action may be *Tranſient*, *Receiv'd*, *Immanent*, or *Reflected* into its Principle, or Agent; hence ariſe Four Kinds of Verbs, to wit, *Active*, *Paſſive*, *Neuter*, and *Reciprocal*, or *Reflective*.

An *Active* Verb, *properly ſo call'd*, ſignifies an Action that paſſes from the *Doer* to *another Object*; as, *Je punis*, I puniſh.

A *Paſſive* Verb ſignifies an Action *receiv'd* of *another*; as, *Je ſuis puni*, I'm puniſh'd.

A *Neutral* Verb ſignifies an Action that *remains* in the *Doer*; as, *Je cours*, I run: And

A *Reciprocal* Verb ſignifies an Action *produc'd* by the *Doer*, and reflected by him upon *himſelf*; as, *Je me divertis*, I divert my ſelf.

There are Seven Things to be conſider'd in a Verb; to wit, *Mood*, *Time* or *Tenſe*, *Number*, *Perſon*, *Figure*, *Forming*, and *Inflection* or *Conjugation*.

For Firſt, an Action may be repreſented in a *Simple*, or *Abſolute*, *Imperious*, *Poſſible*, or *Indefinite* Manner; from hence ariſe Four different Manners of expreſſing or repreſenting an Action, called *Moods*, to wit, the *Indicative*, *Imperative*, *Conjunctive*, and *Infinitive*. The Indicative Mood declares the Action *Simply*, and *without* any *Dependence*; as, *Je donne*, I give: Or, *Je donnerai*, I will give. The Imperative *commandeth*, or *forbiddeth* the Action; as, *Don-*

ner

nez, Give, or *Ne donnez pas*, Give not. The Conjunctive repreſenteth it *conditionally*, and *depending* on ſome thing that goes before; as, *Que je donne*, That I give; *Que je donnaſſe*, That I might give. Laſtly, the Infinitive expreſſeth the Action, *without* mentioning the *Doer* or *Sufferer*, or any Number; as, *Donner*, To give; *Etre puni*, To be puniſh'd.

An Action may be repreſented, as *preſent*, *paſt*, or, *to come*; from whence ariſe Three chief *Times*, or *Tenſes* in Verbs, called the *Preſent*, the *Preter-perfect*, and the *Future*. The Preſent repreſents the Action *doing*; as, I give, *Je donne*. The Preter-perfect, an Action *done*; as, I have given, *J' ai donné*. And the Future an Action *to be done*; as, I ſhall, or will give, *Je donnerai*. The other Tenſes mark ſome particular Differences of theſe Three principal ones, and are peculiar to ſome Languages, and not to others: Thus, the Difference of theſe Three paſt Times, *J' aimai*, *j' ai aimé*, *j' eus aimé*, which are called the *Preter-perfect definite*, the *Preter-perfect indefinite*; and the Second *Preter-pluperfect*, or *anterior Preterit*, is not mark'd in the *Latin*, which expreſſes them all by *Amavi*.

The *French* make Uſe of *Ten* different *Tenſes*; Five of which are *Simple*, conſiſting of *one Word*, and Five *Compound*, and conſiſt of *two Words*; whereof the firſt is ſome Tenſe of one of the *Auxiliary Verbs*, and the laſt the *Participle paſſive* of the Verb. The Five Simple

are

are the *Preſent*, *Imperfect*, *paſt Definite*, *Future*, and *Conditional Preſent*, or *Uncertain*. Three of which I have already explain'd, *viz.* the Preſent, the Paſt, and the Future. The Imperfect marks an Action *begun*, and *not ended*; or, an Action that was *preſent* at a *certain determin'd* Time; as, *J'etois à Table, lorſque vous arrivates*; I was at Dinner or Supper when you came: My Situation at Table is paſt, but I mark it as *preſent* with Regard to your *Arrival*.

The Conditional Preſent marks a Thing that *would happen* upon certain *Conditions*; thus, when I ſay, *Je ſerois heureux ſi je vous voyois*; I would be happy if I ſaw you; I give to underſtand, that my Happineſs *depends* upon a *Condition*, which is that of *ſeeing you*; and I make this Time *refer* to the Preſent, becauſe, in *ſuppoſing* the Condition, the Thing which *is not*, *would be* preſent; and that I may ſay, *Je ſerois à preſent heureux, ſi je vous voyois*; I would be now happy if I ſaw you.

The Preter, or paſt Time is divided into *Definite*, and *Indefinite*. The Definite marks a Thing *paſt* in a Time, whereof no Part *remains*; as when I ſay, *Je fus malade l'année derniere*; I was ſick laſt Year; Nothing of the former Year remains.

The Indefinite paſt, which is the *firſt* of the Compound Tenſes, marks a Thing *paſt* in a Time, which is not *deſign'd*, or, if it is, *ſome Part* of it is yet to *run*; as when I ſay, *Les fruits*

fruits de la Terre ont eté la nourriture des premiers hommes; The Fruits of the Earth were, or, have been the Food of the firſt Men; I do not *mark the Time.* And when I ſay, *J'ai eu la Fiévre cette Année, ce printems, cette ſemaine, aujourd'hui*; I had, or, have had the Fever this Year, this Spring, this Week, this Day; theſe are not Times *abſolutely paſt*, there remains yet ſome Part to *run.*

The Plu-perfect, or *Compound* of the *Imperfect* denotes *doubly paſt*, that is to ſay, That in a certain determinate paſt Time, the Thing we ſpeak of, was *already paſt*; as, *J'avois pris mon parti, quand on eſt venu me ſolliciter*; I had determin'd my ſelf, when they came to ſolicite me, my Reſolutions were then fixed.

The *Compound* of the *Preterit*, or, Preterit *anterior*, is ſo called, becauſe it expreſſes a *Thing paſt before another*, in a Time whereof *no Part* remains; thus, when I ſay, *Quand j'eus reçu mon argent, je m'en allai*; When I receiv'd, or, had receiv'd my Money, I went away: This is, as if I had ſaid, *Je reçus mon argent, et enſuite je m'en allai*; I receiv'd my Money, and afterwards went away.

The *Compound* of the *Future*, or Future paſt, informs us, that in the Time that *one Thing happens*, another, that *is not as yet*, ſhall be paſt; as when I ſay, *Quand j'aurai reçu ce que j'attens, je vous ecrirai*; When I have, or, ſhall have receiv'd what I expect, I ſhall write to you; the Reception of what I expect is *yet to come*,

come, but I deſign it *as paſt*, with regard to my Action of *writing* to you, which is alſo *to come*.

The *Compound* of the *Conditional*, or, the Conditional paſt, marks, that ſomething *would have happen'd*, if certain Conditions *had taken Place*; thus, when I ſay, *J'aurois eté, ou, J'euſſe eté incommodé, ſi j'avois mangé d'avantage*; I would have been ſick, or, out of Order, if I had eat any more: It is underſtood, that my Uneaſineſs is tied down to my *proviſo* of eating more, and that I was, or, have not been uneaſy, becauſe I ate no more. In other Reſpects, this Tenſe ſhould have a *Reference* to the *paſt*; ſince, if the Thing had happen'd, it would have been *paſt*, with regard to the Time wherein *I ſpeak*; and one may ſay, *J'aurois, ou, J'euſſe eté incommodé hier, ſi j'avois mangé d'avantage.*

An Action is perform'd by *one*; as, *Le Cheval galope*; The Horſe gallops: Or, by *many*, The Horſes gallop; *Les Chevaux galopent*: From whence ariſe two *Numbers* in Verbs, as in Nouns, the *Singular* and the *Plural*.

An Action is done by *me alone*, or by *thee alone*, or by *him alone*, or by any other Being, that is, neither *I*, nor *thou*; and theſe three *Agents* or *Doers*, taken ſeparately, are called the *three Perſons* of the Singular Number; as, *J'aime*, I love; *tu aimes*, thou loves; *il aime*, he loves; *elle aime*, ſhe loves: Or elſe it is done by many joyntly; as, *We, ye, they*,

or

or many other Beings together, that are neither *we*, nor *ye*, or *you*; and these three Kinds of *Doers*, or *Receivers*, are called the *Three Persons* of the Plural Number; as, *Nous aimons*, We love; *vous aimez*, you love; *ils aiment*, *elles aiment*, they love; *nous sommes aimés*, we are loved, &c.

Figure of Verbs sheweth, whether they be *Primitives*, or *Derivatives*, *Simples*, or *Compounds*, &c. Primitive, as, *Crier*, To cry. Derivative, as, *Criailler*, To bawl. Simple, as, *Tenir*, To hold; and Compound, as, *Soutenir*, To uphold.

Formation teaches how one Tense is *form'd* of another. There are in every Conjugation Five *Primitive Tenses*, from which the others are form'd, *viz.* The *Infinitive*, the *Participles Active* and *Passive*, the *Present*, and *Preterit* of the *Indicative*; and as the Terminations of these Tenses *vary*, according to the *different* Conjugations they belong to, it is necessary to know them, in order to form the other Tenses by them. I shall therefore set them down, marking them with the *Cyphers* 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. ranging them in the following Order.

First Conjugation.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
er,	*ant*,	*é*,	*e*,	*ai*.
Aim-*er*,	Aim-*ant*,	Aim-*é*,	Aim-*e*,	Aim-*ai*.

All

All the Verbs of the *first Conjugation*, which are about Two-thousand and Seven-hundred, follow this general Rule for their *Primitive Tenses*, except only *Aller* and *Puer*.

Second Conjugation.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
ir,	*iſſant*,	*i*,	*is*,	*is*.
Fin-*ir*,	Fin-*iſſant*,	Fin-*i*,	je Fin-*is*,	je Fin-*is*.

Firſt Difference.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
ir,	*ant*,	*i*,	*s*,	*is*.
Sent-*ir*,	Sent-*ant*,	Sent-*i*,	je Sen-*s*,	je Sen-*tis*.

The Verbs of this *firſt Difference* loſe in the preſent of the Indicative, the Conſonant that goes before *ir* of the Infinitive; as, *Bouillir*, *je Bous*; *Dormir*, *je Dors*; *Mentir*, *je Mens*; *Partir*, *je Pars*; *ſe Repentir*, *je me Repens*; *Servir*, *je Sers*; *Sortir*, *je Sors*.

Second Difference.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
enir,	*enant*,	*enu*,	*iens*,	*ins*.
T-*enir*,	T-*enant*,	T-*enu*,	je T-*iens*,	je T-*ins*.
V-*enir*,	V-*enant*,	V-*enu*,	je V-*iens*,	je V-*ins*.

Third Difference.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
rir,	*rant*,	*ert*,	*re*,	*ris*.
Couv-*rir*,	Couv-*rant*,	Couv-*ert*,	Couv-*re*,	Couv-*ris*.
Souf-*rir*,	Souff-*rant*,	Souff-*ert*,	Souff-*re*,	Souff-*ris*.

The

The *Irregular Verbs* of the Second Conjugation, that is, ſuch as their Primitive Tenſes cannot be *rang'd* under any of the above four Kinds, are *Courir*, *Cueiller*, *Faillir*, *Fuir*, *Mourir*, *Ouir*, *Querir*, *Saillir*, *Vetir*; and the Compounds of the three laſt: *Haïr* is only irregular in the firſt three Perſons Singular of the Preſent of the Indicative, and ſecond Perſon Singular of the Imperative.

Third Conjugation.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
evoir,	*evant*,	*u*,	*ois*,	*us*.

Rec-*evoir*, Rec-*evant*, Reç-*u*, je Reç-*ois*, je Reç-*us*.

The Irregular Verbs of this Conjugation are, *Avoir*, *Cheoir*, *Faloir*, *Mouvoir*, *Pleuvoir*, *Pouvoir*, *Savoir*, *Seoir*, *S'aſſeoir*, *Valoir*, *Voir*, *Vouloir*, and their Compounds.

Fourth Conjugation.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
dre,	*dant*,	*du*,	*ds*,	*dis*.

Ren-*dre*, Ren-*dant*, Ren-*du*, je Ren-*ds*, je Ren-*dis*.
Repon-*dre*, Repon-*dant*, Repon-*du*, Repon-*ds*, je Repon-*dis*.

Firſt Difference.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
indre,	*ignant*,	*int*,	*ins*,	*ignis*.

Cra-*indre*, Cra-*ignant*, Cra-*int*, je Cra-*ins*, je Cra-*ignis*.
Jo-*indre*, Jo-*ignant*, Jo-*int*, je Jo-*ins*, je Jo-*ignis*.

Second

Second Difference.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
aire,	*aiſant,*	*u,*	*ais,*	*us.*
Pl-*aire,*	Pl-*aiſant,*	Pl-*u,*	je Pl-*ais,*	je Pl-*us.*
T-*aire,*	T-*aiſant,*	T-*u,*	je T-*ais,*	je T-*us.*

Third Difference.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
uire,	*uiſant,*	*uit,*	*uis,*	*uiſis.*

Prod-*uire,* Prod-*uiſant,* Prod-*uit,* je Prod-*uis,* je Prod-*uiſis.*

Fourth Difference.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
aitre, or *oitre.*	*aiſſant,* or *oiſſant.*	*u,*	*ais,* or *oit.*	*us.*

Rep-*aitre,* Rep-*aiſſant,* Rep-*u,* je Rep-*ais,* je Rep-*us.*
Conn-*oitre,* Conn-*oiſſant,* Conn-*u,* je Conn-*ois,* je Conn-*us.*
Par-*oitre,* Par-*oiſſant,* Par-*u,* je Par-*ois,* je Par-*us.*

The Irregular Verbs of this Fourth Conjugation are *Battre, Boire, Braire, Bruire, Circoncire, Clore, Conclure, Confire, Coudre, Croire, Dire, Ecrire, Etre, Exclure, Faire, Frire, Lire, Luire, Mettre, Moudre, Naitre, Nuire, Prendre, Rire, Rompre, Soudre, Suffire, Suivre, Traire, Vaincre, Vivre,* and their Compounds.

But that nothing may be omitted on this Article, I ſhall give the Primitive Tenſes of all the Irregular Verbs of each Conjugation, and begin with thoſe of the firſt.

Aller,

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
Aller,	*Allant,*	*Allé,*	*je Vais,*	*j'Allai.*
Puer,	*Puant,*	*Pué,*	*je Pus,*	*je Puai.*

Irregular Verbs of the ſecond Conjugation.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
Courir,	*Courant,*	*Couru,*	*je Cours,*	*je Courus.*
Cueillir,	*Cueillant,*	*Cueilli,*	*je Cueille,*	*je Cueillis.*
Faillir,		*Failli,*		*je Faillis.*
Fuir,	*Fuyant,*	*Fui,*	*je Fuis,*	*je Fuis.*
Mourir,	*Mourant,*	*Mort,*	*je Meurs,*	*je Mourus.*
Ouir,		*Oui,*		*j'Ouis.*
Querir,				
Acquerir,	*Acquerant,*	*Acquis,*	*j'Acquiers,*	*j'Acquis.*
Saillir,	*Saillant,*	*Sailli,*	*je Saille, or je Saillis,*	*je Saillis.*
Vetir,		*Vetu,*	*je Vets,*	*je Vetis.*
Reveter,	*Revetant,*	*Revetu,*	*je Revets,*	*je Revetis.*

Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
Avoir,	*Ayant,*	*Eu,*	*j'Ai,*	*j'Eus.*
Choir,		*Chu,*		
Dechoir,		*Dechu,*	*je Decheois,*	*je Dechus.*
Echeoir,		*échu,*	*j'Echeois,*	*j'Echus.*
Faloir,		*Falu,*	*il Faut,*	*il Falu.*
Mouvoir,	*Mouvant,*	*Mû,*	*je Meus,*	*je Mus.*
Pleuvoir,	*Pleuvant,*	*Plû,*	*il Pleut,*	*il Plut.*
Pouvoir,	*Pouvant,*	*Pû,*	*je Puis,*	*je Pus.*
Savoir,	*Sachant,*	*Sû,*	*je Sais,*	*je Sus.*
Seoir,	*Seant, or Seyant,*	*Sis,*	*je Sieds.*	

j'Aſſeior,

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
s'Asseoir,	s'Asseyant,	Assis,	je m'Assieds,	je m'Assis.
Surseoir,	Surseyant,	Surfis,	je Surseois,	je Surfis.
Valoir,	Valant,	Valu,	je Vaux,	je Valus.
Voir,	Voyant,	Vû,	je Vois,	je Vis.
Vouloir,	Voulant,	Voulu,	je Veux,	je Voulus.

Irregular Verbs of the fourth Conjugation.

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
Battre,	Battant,	Batu,	je Bats,	je Battis.
Boire,	Buvant,	Bû,	je Bois,	je Bus.
Braire,				
Bruire,	Bruyant,			
Circoncire,		Circoncis,	je Circoncis,	je Circoncis.
Clore,		Clos,	je Clos,	
Conclure,	Concluant,	Conclu,	je Conclus,	je Conclus.
Confire,	Confisant,	Confit,	je Confis,	je Confis.
Coudre,	Cousant,	Cousu,	je Couds,	je Cousus.
Croire,	Croyant,	Cru,	je Crois,	je Crus.
Dire,	Disant,	Dit,	je Dis,	je Dis.
Maudire,	Maudissant,	Maudit,	je Maudis,	je Maudis.
Ecrire,	Ecrivant,	Ecrit,	j'Ecris,	j'Ecrivis.
Etre,	Etant,	été,	je Suis,	je Fus.
Exclure,	Excluant,	Exclus,	j'Exclus,	j'Exclus.
Frire,		Frit,	je Fris,	
Lire,	Lisant,	Lû,	je Lis,	je Lus.
Luire,	Luisant,	Lui,	je Luis,	
Mettre,	Mettant,	Mis,	je Mets,	je Mis.
Moudre,	Moulant,	Moulu,	je Mouds,	je Moulu.
Naitre,	Naissant,	Né,	je Nais,	je Naquis.
Nuire,	Nuisant,	Nui,	je Nuis,	je Nuisis.
Prendre,	Prenant,	Pris,	je Prens,	je Pris.
Rire,	Riant,	Ri,	je Ris,	je Ris.
Rompre,	Rompant,	Rompu,	je Romps,	je Rompis.
Soudre,				

Absoudre,

1.	2.	3.	4.	5.
Absoudre,		*Absous,*	*j' Absous,*	
Resoudre,	*Resolvant,*	*Resous,* or, *Resolu,*	*je Resous,*	*je Resolus.*
Suffire,	*Suffisant,*	*Suffi.*	*je Suffis,*	*je Suffis.*
Suivre,	*Suivant,*	*Suivi.*	*je Suis,*	*je Suivis.*
Traire,	*Trayant,*	*Trait.*	*je Trais,*	
Vaincre,	*Vainquant,*	*Vaincu,*		*je Vainquis.*
Vivre,	*Vivant,*	*Vecu,*	*je Vis,*	*je Vecus,* or, *je Vequis.*

Thus, in order to discover the primitive Tenses of any Verb, after having observ'd the Termination of the Infinitive, see if it agrees to any Verbs of the Four Regular Conjugations; if not, you are sure to find it amongst the Irregulars of that Conjugation: And you are to observe, that the Compounds are inflected or conjugated as their Simples, except where it is otherwise mark'd in the preceeding Table.

Now, after the Primitive Tenses are known, it remains to shew what other *Tenses* are *form'd* from each of them: And First, from the *Infinitive* is form'd,

The *Future* of the *Indicative* in putting *ai* after the final *R* of the Infinitive; as, *aimer, J'aimerai, Punir, je punirai, Prendre, je prendrai.*

This Rule holds for all *Regular Verbs*, except those *in enir*, and *oir*, which, for forming

their Future, change *Enir* into *iendrai*, and *Oir* into *rai*, as, *Venir*, *viendrai*, *Recevoir*, *recevrai*.

Except alſo thoſe irregular Verbs, *Aller*, *j'irai*, *Envoyer*, *j'enverrai*, *Acquerir*, *j'acquerrai*, *Courir*, *je courrai*, *Cueillir*, *je cueillerai*, *Mourir*, *je mourrai*, *Faire*, *je ferai*, *Faloir*, *il faudra*, *Pouvoir*, *je pourrai*, *Savoir*, *je ſaurai*, *Seoir*, *je me ſierai*, *s'Aſſeoir*, *je m'aſſierai*, ou *m'Aſſirai*, *Decheoir*, *je decherrai*, *Echeoir*, *j'echerrai*, *Valoir*, *je vaudrai*, *Voir*, *je verrai*, (its Compounds *Pourvoir*, and *Prévoir* follow the general Rule) *Vouloir*, *je voudrai*.

From the *Future* is form'd the *Conditional Preſent*, by changing *ai* into *ois*, without any Exception; as, *Je Chanterai*, *je chanterois*, *Je Dormirai*, *je dormirois*, *Je Voudrai*, *je voudrois*, *Je Prendrai*, *je prendrois*.

From the *Participle Active* are form'd, (1.) The *Imperfect* of the *Indicative*, by changing *ant* into *ois*, *Portant*, *je portois*, *Finiſſant*, *je finiſſois*, *Liſant*, *je liſois*. Exceptions: *Ayant*, *j'avois*, *Sachant*, *je ſavois*.

(2.) The *Preſent* of the *Conjunctive*, by changing *ant* into *E mute*; *Chantant*, *que je chante*, *Diſant*, *que je diſe*, *Ecrivant*, *que j'ecrive*. Exceptions: Verbs in *Enir* change *enant* into *ienne*, *Tenir*, *tenant*, *que je tienne*. Thoſe in *Evoir* change *evant* into *oive*, *Concevoir*, *concevant*, *que je conçoive*. The following Irregulars, *Aller*, *allant*, *que j'aille*, *Mourir*, *mourant*, *que je meure*, *Boire*, *buvant*, *que je boive*, *Etre*, *etant*,

etant, que je ſois, Faire, faiſant, que je faſſe, Prendre, prenant, que je prenne, Mouvoir, mouvant, que je meuve, Faloir, qu'il faille, Pouvoir, pouvant, que je puiſſe, Valoir, valant, que je vaille, Vouloir, voulant, que je veuille.

(3.) The *Firſt* and *Second Perſons Plural* of the *Preſent* of the *Indicative*, in changing *ant* into *ons* and *ez*; *Donnant, nous donnons, vous donnez.* Exceptions: *Dire, diſant, nous diſons, vous dites,* (the Compounds of this Verb follow the general Rule) *Faire, faiſant, nous faiſons, vous faites, Savoir, ſachant, nous ſavons, vous ſavez.*

(4.) The *Firſt* and *Second Perſons Plural* of the *Preſent* of the *Conjunctive*, by changing *ant* into *ions* and *iez*; *Repondant, que nous repondions, que vous repondiez.* Exceptions: *Etre, etant, que nous ſoyons, que vous ſoyez, Faire, faiſant, que nous faſſions, que vous faſſiez, Pouvoir, pouvant, que nous puiſſions, que vous puiſſiez.*

Of the *Participle Paſſive*, are form'd all the *Compound Tenſes* of the *Indicative, Conjunctive, Infinitive* and *Participle Active*, in joyning to them the ſimple Tenſes of the auxiliary Verb *Avoir*; as, *Aimé, j'ai aimé, j'avois aimé, j'eus aimé, j'aurai aimé, j'aurois aimé, que j'aye aimé, que j'euſſe aimé, avoir aimé, ayant aimé.*

There are ſome Verbs, which, inſtead of the Tenſes of *Avoir*, take, with their Participle paſſive, thoſe of the auxiliary Verb *Etre*; as in the Verb *Tomber*, we ſay *Je ſuis tombé, j'etois tombé, je ſerai tombé, je ſerois tombé, que*

je ſois tombé, que je fuſſe tombé, etre tombé, etant tombé.

When the Participle Paſſive of a Verb is *joyn'd* with the Tenſes of *Avoir*, it is *ordinarily indeclinable*, that is, it ſuffers no Change, in whatever Number or Perſon it be; thus we ſay, *Mon frere a aimé, ma ſoeur a aimé, mes freres ont aimé, mes ſoeurs ont aimé.* But if the Participle Paſſive is *joyn'd* with the Tenſes of *Etre*, it is *moſt frequently declinable*, that is, it has different Terminations to expreſs the Genders and Numbers; thus we muſt ſay, *Mon frere eſt tombé, ma ſoeur eſt tombée, mes freres ſont tombés, mes ſoeurs ſont tombées.*

From the *Preſent* of the *Indicative* is form'd the *Imperative* in ſuppreſſing the perſonal Pronoun; *J'aime, aime, je finis, finis, je rends, rends, je reçois, reçois.* Exceptions: *Aller, je vais, va, Etre, je ſuis, ſois, Savoir, je ſais, ſache.*

Of the *Preterit* of the *Indicative* is form'd the *Imperfect* of the Conjunctive, by changing *i* into *ſſe*, for the firſt Conjugation; as, *Je donnai, je donnaſſe*, and in adding *ſe* for the other three; *Je Finis, que je finiſſe, je Rendis, que je rendiſſe, je Reçus, que je reçuſſe, je Tins, que je tinſſe.*

It would be too tedious to go through the other *Perſons*; beſides, they will be ſufficiently known by *Practice*, and the Inflections I am to ſet down *at large* of the two *auxiliary Verbs* and of the Four *regular Conjugations*.

Inflexion

Inflection or *Conjugation* is the *changing* of the *Termination* of a *Verb*, through all its Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons. All Verbs are not conjugated the *same Way*; their Terminations depending chiefly upon their *Infinitives*, they *vary* according as the Infinitive has a *different Termination*: But, as all Infinitives end in *Er*, *Ir*, *Oir* and *Re*, they form Four different Conjugations, to *one* of which all Verbs are reducible, tho' some of them may have different Terminations, in *some Tenses* and *Persons*, from the general Rule, occasion'd by the Letters or Syllables that precede these Finals; as has been observ'd in the general and particular Rules for the Formation of Tenses.

I shall begin with the two auxiliary Verbs, *Avoir* and *Etre*, tho' irregular, because the other Verbs cannot be conjugated in their *compound Tenses* without them.

The Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb Avoir.

Indicative.

SING. *J'ai*, I have. *Tu as*, Thou hast. *Il a*, He hath. *Elle a*, She hath. PLU. *Nous avons*, We have. *Vous avez*, Ye have. *Ils ont*, ou *Elles ont*, They have.

Imperfect Past.

SING. *J'avois*, I had. *Tu avois*, Thou hadst. *Il avoit*, He had. PLU. *Nous avions*, We had. *Vous aviez*, Ye had. *Ils avoient*, They had.

Paſt Simple.

SING. *J'eus*, I had. *Tu eus*, Thou hadſt. *Il eut*, He had. PLU. *Nous eumes*, We had. *Vous eutes*, Ye had. *Ils eurent*, They had.

Paſt Compound, or *Compound of the Preſent.*

SING. *J'ai eu*, I had, *or* I have had. *Tu as eu*, Thou haſt had. *Il a eu*, He hath had. PLU. *Nous avons eu*, We had, *or* We have had. *Vous avez eu*, Ye have had. *Ils ont eu*, They have had.

Compound of the Imperfect.

SING. *J'avois eu*, I had had. *Tu avois eu*, Thou hadſt had. *Il avoit eu*, He had had. PLU. *Nous avions eu*, We had had. *Vous aviez eu*, Ye had had. *Ils avoient eu*, They had had.

Compound of the Perfect or Paſt.

SING. *J'eus eu*, I had had. *Tu eus eu*, Thou hadſt had. *Il eut eu*, He had had. PLU. *Nous eumes eu*, We had had. *Vous eutes eu*, Ye had had. *Ils eurent eu*, They had had.

Future Tenſe.

SING. *J'aurai*, I ſhall or will have. *Tu auras*, Thou ſhalt have. *Il aura*, He ſhall have. PLU. *Nous aurons*, We ſhall have. *Vous aurez*, Ye ſhall have. *Ils auront*, They ſhall have.

The Future paſt, or Compound of the Future.

SING. *J'aurai eu, Tu auras eu, Il aura eu*. I ſhall have had, *&c.* PLU. *Nous aurons eu, Vous aurez eu, Ils auront eu*, We ſhall have had, *&c.*

The Conditional Preſent, or Uncertain Tenſe.

SING *J'aurois, Tu aurois, Il auroit*, I ſhould or would have, *&c.* PLU *Nous aurions, Vous auriez, Ils auroient*, We ſhould or would have, *&c.*

The

The Conditional Past.

SING. *J'aurois eu,* ou *J'eusse eu, Tu aurois,* ou *eusses eu, Il auroit,* ou *eut eu,* I should or would have had. PLU. *Nous aurions eu,* ou *eussions eu, Vous auriez eu,* ou *eussiez eu, Ils auroient eu,* ou *eussent eu.* We should, *&c.* have had.

Imperative Present or Future.

Aye, Have thou. *Qu'il ait,* Let him have. *Ayons,* Let us have. *Ayez,* Have ye. *Qu'ils ayent,* Let them have.

The Conjunctive Mood, Present or Future.

SING. *Que j'aye, Que tu ayes, Qu'il ait,* That I may have, *&c.* PLU. *Que nous ayons, Vous ayez, Ils ayent,* That we may have, *&c.*

The Imperfect.

SING. *Que j'eusse, Tu eusses, Il eût,* That I might have, *&c.* PLU. *Nous eussions, Vous eussiez, Ils eussent,* That we might have, *&c.*

The Preterit or Past.

SING. *Que j'aie eu, Tu aies eu, Il ait eu,* That I have had, *&c.* PLU. *Que nous ayons eu, Vous ayez eu, Ils ayent eu,* That we have had, *&c.*

Pluperfect, or more than Past.

SING. *Que j'eusse eu, Tu eusses eu, Il eut eu,* That I had had, *&c.* PLU. *Que nous eussions eu, Vous eussiez eu, Ils eussent eu,* That we had had, *&c.*

Infinitive Present. *Avoir,* To have.

Past. *Avoir eu,* To have had.

Participle Active Present. *Ayant,* Having.

Preterit or Past. *Ayant eu,* Having had.

Participle Passive Present. *Eu, Eue,* Had.

Gerund. *Ayant,* Having.

This

This is the proper Place to give an Account, why I *transpose* the Tenſe in *rois*, from the Subjunctive to the Indicative, contrary to the *Practice* of the moſt Part of Grammarians: And *Firſt*, This Uncertain Tenſe points out, of its ſelf, the Affirmation *without any Dependence* on another Verb. *Secondly*, In many Caſes it is not preceded by the Particle *Que* or *Qui*, without which no *French Subjunctive* is us'd. *Laſtly*, This Tenſe in *rois* is *never* govern'd by thoſe Conjunctions that *govern* the Subjunctive, but by thoſe that *govern* the Indicative; therefore it is a Tenſe of the Indicative, and not of the Subjunctive.

For its *compound Tenſe*, and that of the *Future*, there is, I hope, no Neceſſity of giving a Reaſon why I place them in the Indicative Mood alſo, ſince their Simples *claim* a Right to it, it is natural their Compounds ſhould *ſhare* with them in that Privilege.

Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb Etre.

Indicative Preſent.

SING. *Je ſuis*, I am. *Tu es*, Thou art. *Il eſt*, He is. *Elle eſt*, She is. PLU. *Nous ſommes*, We are. *Vous etes*, Ye are. *Ils* ou *Elles ſont*, They are.

Imperfect Paſt.

SING. *J'etois*, I was. *Tu etois*, Thou waſt. *Il etoit*, He was. PLU. *Nous etions*, We were. *Vous etiez*, You were. *Ils etoient*, They were.

Paſt Simple.

SING. *Je fus*, I was. *Tu fus*, Thou waſt. *Il fut*, He was. PLU. *Nous fumes*, We were. *Vous futes*, You were. *Ils furent*, They were.

Paſt Compound, or Compound of the Preſent.

SING. *J'ai eté*, I was, *or* have been. *Tu as eté*, Thou has been. *Il a eté*, He has been.

PLU.

PLU. *Nous avons eté*, We have been. *Vous avez eté*, You have been. *Ils ont été*, They have been.

Compound of the Imperfect.

SING. *J'avois eté*, I had been. *Tu avois eté*, Thou hadſt been. *Il avoit eté*, He had been. PLU. *Nous avons eté*, We had been. *Vous aviez été*, You had been. *Ils avoient éte*, They had been.

Compound of the Perfect or Paſt.

SING. *J'eus eté*, I had been. *Tu eus eté*, Thou hadſt been. *Il eut eté*, He had been. PLU. *Nous eumes eté*, We had been. *Vous eutes eté*, You had been. *Ils eurent eté*, They had been.

Future Tenſe.

SING. *Je ſerai*, I ſhall, *or* will be. *Tu ſeras*, Thou ſhalt be. *Il ſera*, He ſhall be. PLU. *Nous ſerons*, We ſhall be. *Vous ſerez*, You ſhall be. *Ils ſeront*, They ſhall be.

Future Paſt, or Compound of the Future.

SING. *J'aurai eté*, I ſhall have been. *Tu auras eté*, Thou, *&c.* *Il aura eté*, He, *&c.* PLU. *Nous aurons eté*, We ſhall have been. *Vous aurez eté*, You, *&c.* *Ils auront eté*, They, *&c.*

Conditional Preſent, or Uncertain Tenſe.

SING. *Je ſerois*, I ſhould, *or* would be. *Tu ſerois*, Thou, *&c.* *Il ſeroit*, He, *&c.* PLU. *Nous ſerions*, We ſhould, *or* would be. *Vous ſeriez*, You, *&c.* *Ils ſeroient*, They, *&c.*

Conditional Paſt.

SING. *J'aurois*, ou *J'euſſe eté*, *Tu aurois*, ou *euſſes eté*, *Il auroit*, ou *eût eté*, I ſhould, *or* would have been, *&c.* PLU. *Nous aurions*, ou *nous euſſions eté*, *Vous auriez*, ou *euſſiez eté*, *Ils auroient*, ou *euſſent eté*, We ſhould, *or* would have been, *&c.*

Impera-

Imperative Preſent, or Future.

SING. *Sois*, Be thou. *Qu'il ſoit*, Let him be. PLU. *Soyons*, Let us be. *Soyez*, Be ye. *Qu'ils ſoyent*, Let them be.

Subjunctive or Conjunctive Preſent, or Future.

SING. *Que je ſois*, That I be. *Que tu ſois*, That thou be. *Qu'il ſoit*, That he be. PLU. *Que nous ſoyons*, That we be. *Que vous ſoyez*, That you be. *Qu'ils ſoient*, That they be.

Imperfect.

SING. *Que je fuſſe*, That I were. *Tu fuſſe*, Thou wert. *Il fût*, He were. PLU. *Que nous fuſſions*, That we were. *Vous fuſſiez*, You were. *Ils fuſſent*, They were.

Preterit or Paſt.

SING. *Que j'aie eté*, That I have been. *Tu aies eté*, Thou, *&c.* *Il ait eté*, He, *&c.* PLU. *Que nous ayons eté*, That we have been. *Vous ayez eté*, You, *&c.* *Ils ayent eté*, They, *&c.*

Pluperfect, or more than Paſt.

SING. *Que j'euſſe eté*, That I had been. *Tu euſſes eté*, Thou, *&c.* *Il eut eté*, He, *&c.* PLU. *Que nous euſſions eté*, That we had been. *Vous euſſiez eté*, You, *&c.* *Ils euſſent eté*, They, *&c.*

Infinitive Preſent. *Etre*, To be.

Preterit or Paſt. *Avoir eté*, To have been.

Participle Active Preſent. *Etant*, Being.

Preterit or Paſt. *Ayant eté*, Having been.

Participle Paſſive. *Eté*, Been.

Gerund. *Etant*, Being.

The

The first of these Verbs *Avoir*, is assisting in the Conjugation of all *Active*, and *some Neutral Verbs*; and the latter *Etre*, in all *Passive*, *Reciprocal*, and *some Neutral Verbs*, and has, sometimes, an *Active* Signification, as, *Je m'en suis oublié*, I have forgot it.

The Conjugation of Regular Verbs.

The First Conjugation.

The first comprehends the *Verbs*, whose *Infinitives* terminate in *Er*, and their *Terminations*, or *last Syllables*, are the *same* thro' all their *Moods*, *Tenses*, *Persons*, and *Numbers*, with those I here set down of *Aimer*.

Indicative Present.

SING. *J'aime*, I love. *Tu aimes*, Thou loves. *Il aime*, He loves. *Elle aime*, She loves. PLU. *Nous aimons*, We love. *Vous aimez*, You love. *Ils*, ou *Elles aiment*, They love.

Imperfect Past.

SING. *J'aimois*, I did love. *Tu aimois*, Thou didst love, *Il aimoit*, He did love. PLU. *Nous aimions*, We did love. *Vous aimiez*, You did love. *Ils aimoient*, They did love.

Past Simple, or Definite.

SING. *J'aimai*, I loved. *Tu aimas*, Thou lovedst. *Il aima*, He loved. PLU. *Nous aimames*, We loved. *Vous aimates*, You loved. *Ils aimerent*, They loved.

Past Indefinite, or Compound of the Present.

SING. *J'ai* aimé, I loved, *or* have loved. *Tu as* aimé, Thou hast loved. *Il a* aimé, He hath loved. PLU. *Nous avons* aimé, We loved, *or* have loved. *Vous avez* aimé, You have loved. *Ils ont* aimé, They have loved,

Compound

Compound of the Imperfect, or Pluperfect.

SING. *J'avois* aimé, I had loved. *Tu avois* aimé, Thou hadſt loved. *Il avoit* aimé, He had loved. PLU. *Nous avions* aimé, We had loved. *Vous aviez* aimé, You had loved. *Ils avoient* aimé, They had loved.

Compound of the Paſt, or Preterit.

SING. *J'eus* aimé, I had loved. *Tu eus* aimé, Thou hadſt loved; *Il eut* aimé, He had loved. PLU. *Nous eumes* aimé, We had loved. *Vous eutes* aimé, You had loved; *Ils eurent* aimé, They had loved.

The Future.

SING. *J'aimerai*, I ſhall, *or* will love. *Tu aimeras*, Thou ſhalt love; *Il aimera*, He ſhall love. PLU. *Nous aimerons*, We ſhall, *or* will love. *Vous aimerez*, You ſhall love. *Ils aimeront*, They ſhall love.

Compound of the Future, or Future paſt.

SING. *J'aurai* aimé, I ſhall have loved. *Tu auras* aimé, Thou ſhalt have loved. *Il aura* aimé, He ſhall have loved. PLU. *Nous aurons* aimé, We ſhall have loved. *Vous aurez* aimé, You ſhall have loved. *Ils auront* aimé, They ſhall have lov'd.

Conditional Preſent, or Uncertain.

SING. *J'aimerois*, I ſhould, *or* would love. *Tu aimerois*, Thou ſhould, *&c.* love. *Il aimeroit*, He ſhould, *&c.* love. PLU. *Nous aimerions*, We ſhould, *or* would love. *Vous aimeriez*, You ſhould, *&c.* love; *Ils aimeroient*, They ſhould, *&c.* love.

Conditional Paſt.

SING. *J'aurai*, ou *j'euſſe* aimé, I ſhould *or* would have lov'd. *Tu aurois* ou *tu euſſes* aimé, Thou ſhouldſt, *&c.* have lov'd. *Il auroit*, ou *il eut* aimé, He ſhould, *&c.*

&c. have lov'd. PLU. *Nous aurions*, ou *nous eussions* aimé, We should, *or* would have lov'd. *Vous auriez*, &c. aimé, You should, &c. have lov'd. *Ils auroient*, &c. aimé, They should, &c. have lov'd.

Imperative.

SING. Aime, Love thou. *Qu'il*, ou *qu'elle* aime, Let him, *or* her love. PLU. Aimons, Let us love. Aimez, Love ye. *Qu'ils*, ou *qu'elles* aiment, Let them love.

Subjunctive or Conjunctive Present, or Future.

SING. *Que j'*aime, That I love, *or* may love. *Que tu* aimes, That thou love, &c. *Qu'il*, ou *qu'elle* aime, That he, *or* she love, &c. PLU. *Que nous* aimions, That we love, *or* may love. *Que vous* aimiez, That you love, &c. *Qu'ils*, ou *qu'elles* aiment, That they love, &c.

Imperfect.

SING. *Que j'*aimasse, That I might love, *or* that I lov'd. *Que tu* aimasses, That thou might love, &c. *Qu'il* aimât, That he might love, &c. PLU. *Que nous* aimassions, That we might love, &c. *Que vous* aimassiez, That you might love, &c. *Qu'ils* aimassent, That they might love, &c.

Preterit.

SING. *Que j'ai* aimé, That I have lov'd. *Que tu as* aimé, That thou hast lov'd. *Qu'il a* aimé, That he hath loved. PLU. *Que nous ayons* aimé, That we have lov'd. *Que vous ayez* aimé, That you have lov'd. *Qu'ils ayent* aimé, That they have lov'd.

Pluperfect.

SING. *Que j'eusse* aimé, That I had loved. *Que tu eusses* aimé, That thou hadst lov'd. *Qu'il eût* aimé, That he had

had lov'd. PLU. *Que nous eûssions* aimé, That we had lov'd. *Que vous eussiez* aimé, That you had lov'd. *Qu'ils eussent* aimé, That they had lov'd.

Infinitive.

Present. Aimer, To love.

Past. *Avoir* aimé, To have lov'd.

Participle active.

Present. Aimant, *Loving.*

Preterit. *Ayant* aimé, Having lov'd.

Participle passive.

Present. Aimé, ou aimée, ou *etant* aimé, aimée, Loved.

Preterit. *Ayant eté* aimé, ou aimée, Having been loved.

Gerund.

En aim*ant*, In loving. Ou Aim*ant*, Loving.

Since I have mentioned the *Gerund*, which few of the Grammarians have taken any Notice of, it is necessary, before I proceed any farther, to explain its *Nature* and *Use*.

It is an Inflection of the Verb, which designs a *transient Action*, a *Circumstance*, *Manner*, or *Mean* of the Action *express'd* by another Verb, to which it is *subordinate*. An Example or two will explain this Definition; as, when I say, *En etudiant vous deviendrez habile*; *En etudiant* only marks a *transient Action*, subservient to the Action of the principal Verb, *Vous deviendrez habile*, and expresseth a *Manner* or *Mean* of becoming skilful, or learn'd. Thus, in this Phrase, *Nous causerons en Marchant*, the Action of Walking is subordinate to that of Talking, or Conversing, and expresseth a Circumstance of Time, since 'tis, as if one should say, We shall clatter, or talk, during the Time we

we are walking. The Prepoſition *En* is not always joyn'd to the *Gerund*, there are many Occaſions wherein it is ſuppreſs'd; as, in this Phraſe, *Elle S'ecria levant les yeux au Ciel*, that is, *En levant les yeux au Ciel*.

The Second Conjugation in Ir.

Indicative Preſent.

SING. *Je* puni*s*, I puniſh, *or* do puniſh. *Tu* puni*s*, Thou puniſheſt. *Il* puni*t*, He puniſheth, ou *elle* puni*t*, She puniſheth. PLU. *Nous* puni*ſſons*, We puniſh. *Vous* puni*ſſez*, Ye puniſh. *Ils*, ou *elles* puni*ſſent*, They puniſh.

Imperfect.

SING. *Je* puni*ſſois*, I puniſhed. *Tu* puni*ſſois*, Thou puniſhed'ſt. *Il* puni*ſſoit*, He puniſh'd. PLU. *Nous* puni*ſſions*, We puniſhed. *Vous* puni*ſſiez*, Ye puniſhed. *Ils* puni*ſſoient*, They puniſhed.

Preter Definite.

SING. *Je* puni*s*, I puniſhed, *or* did puniſh. *Tu* puni*s*, Thou puniſhedſt. *Il* puni*t*, He puniſhed. PLU. *Nous* puni*mes*, We puniſhed. *Vous* puni*tes*, Ye puniſhed. *Ils* puni*rent*, They puniſhed.

Preter Indefinite, or Compound of the Preſent.

SING *J'ai* puni, I have puniſhed. *Tu as* puni, Thou haſt puniſhed. *Il a* puni, He has puniſhed. PLU. *Nous avons* puni, We have puniſhed. *Vous avez* puni, Ye have puniſhed. *Ils*, ou *elles ont* puni, They have puniſhed.

Pluperfect, or Compound of the Imperfect.

SING. *J'avois* puni, I had puniſhed. *Tu avois* puni, Thou hadſt puniſhed. *Il avoit* puni, He had puniſhed.

niſhed. PLU. *Nous avions* puni, We had puniſhed. *Vous aviez* puni, Ye had puniſhed. *Ils avoient* puni, They had puniſhed.

Preterit anterior, or Compound of the Preterit.

SING. *Jeus* puni, I had puniſhed. *Tu eus* puni, Thou hadſt puniſhed. *Il eut* puni, He had puniſhed. PLU. *Nous eumes* puni, We had puniſhed. *Vous eutes* puni, Ye had puniſhed. *Ils eurent* puni, They had puniſhed.

Future.

SING. *Je* puni*rai*, I ſhall, *or* will puniſh. *Tu* puni*ras*, Thou ſhalt puniſh. *Il* puni*ra*, He ſhall puniſh. PLU. *Nous* puni*rons*, We ſhall puniſh *Vous* puni*rez*, Ye ſhall puniſh. *Ils* puni*ront*, They ſhall puniſh.

Future paſt, or Compound of the Future.

SING. *J'aurai* puni, I ſhall have puniſhed. *Tu auras* puni, Thou ſhalt have puniſhed. *Il aura* puni, He ſhall have puniſhed. PLU. *Nous aurons* puni, We ſhall have puniſhed. *Vous aurez* puni, Ye ſhall have puniſhed. *Ils auront* puni, They ſhall have puniſhed.

Conditional Preſent.

SING. *Je* puni*rois*, I ſhould, would, *or* could puniſh. *Tu* puni*rois*, Thou, *&c.* *Il* puni*roit*, He, *&c.* PLU. *Nous* puni*rions*, We could, would, *or* ſhould puniſh. *Vous* puni*riez*, Ye, *&c.* *Ils* puni*roient*, They, *&c.*

Conditional Paſt.

SING. *J'aurois*, ou *J'euſſe* puni, I had, ſhould, *or* would have puniſhed. *Tu aurois*, ou *tu euſſes* puni, Thou hadſt, *&c.* *Il auroit*, ou *il eut* puni, He had, *&c.* PLU. *Nous aurions*, ou *nous euſſions* puni, We had, *or* ſhould, *or* would have puniſhed. *Vous auriez*, ou *vous euſſiez* puni, Ye had, *&c.* *Ils auroient*, ou *ils euſſent* puni, They had, *&c.*

Impera-

Imperative Preſent and Future.

SING. Punis, Puniſh thou. *Qu'il puniſſe*, Let him puniſh. PLU. *Puniſſons*, Let us puniſh. *Puniſſez*, Puniſh ye. *Qu'ils puniſſent*, Let them puniſh.

Subjunctive, or Conjunctive, Preſent, or Future.

SING. *Que je puniſſe*, That I puniſh. *Tu puniſſes*, Thou puniſh. *Il puniſſe*, He puniſh. PLU. *Nous puniſſions*, We puniſh. *Vous puniſſiez*, Ye puniſh, *Ils puniſſent*, They puniſh.

Imperfect.

SING. *Que je puniſſe*, That I puniſhed, *or* ſhould, *or* would puniſh. *Tu puniſſes*, Thou puniſhed, *&c.* *Il punît*, He puniſhed, *&c.* PLU. *Nous puniſſions*, We puniſhed, *&c.* *Vous puniſſiez*, Ye puniſhed, *&c.* *Ils puniſſent*, They puniſhed, *&c.*

Preterit.

SING. *Que j'aie* puni, That I have puniſhed. *Tu aies* puni, Thou haſt puniſhed. *Il ait* puni, He has puniſhed. PLU. *Nous ayons* puni, We have puniſhed. *Vous ayez* puni, Ye have, *&c.* *Ils ayent* puni, They have, *&c.*

Pluperfect.

SING. *Que j'euſſe* puni, That I had, ſhould, *or* would have puniſhed. *Tu euſſes* puni, Thou had, *&c.* *Il eût* puni, He had, *&c.* PLU. *Nous euſſions* puni, We had, *&c.* *Vous euſſiez* puni, Ye had, *&c.* *Ils euſſent* puni, They had, *&c.*

Infinitive Preſent. Punir, To puniſh.

Paſt. *Avoir* puni, To have puniſhed.

Participle Active, Preſent. Puniſſant, Puniſhing.

Paſt. *Ayant* puni, Having puniſhed.

Participle Paſſive, Preſent. Puni, punie, Puniſhed, *or Etant* puni, punie, Being puniſhed.

Paſt. Ayant ete puni, punie, Having been puniſhed.

Gerund. En puniſſant, *or* puniſſant, In puniſhing.

Differences of the Second Conjugation.

Firſt Difference.

Indicative, Sentir, To feel.

Preſent. SING. *Je* ſens, *I feel.* PLU. *Nous* ſentons, We feel.
Imp. *Je* ſentois, I felt. PLU. *Nous* ſentions, We felt.
Perf. *Je* ſentis, I felt. PLU. *Nous* ſentimes, We felt.
3 Compounds. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus* ſenti.
Fut. *Je* ſentirai, I ſhall feel.
Fut. Paſt. *J'aurai* ſenti, I ſhall have felt.
Cond. Pr. *Je* ſentirois, I ſhould, *or* would feel.
Cond. Paſt. *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe* ſenti, I ſhould, *&c.* have felt.

Imperative.

SING. ſens, *qu'il* ſente. PLU. ſentons, ſentez, *qu'ils* ſentent.

Subjunctive.

Pre. SING. *Que je* ſente, That I feel. PLU. *Que nous* ſentions, That we feel.
Imp. *Que je* ſentiſſe, That I felt, *or,* might feel.
Perf. *Que j'aie* ſenti, That I have felt.
Pluper. *Que j'euſſe* ſenti, That I had felt.
Infin. Pre. Sentir. Paſt. *Avoir* ſenti.
Participle Pre. Sentant. Pret. *Ayant* ſenti.
Part. Paſſive, Pre. Senti, ſentie, ou *etant* ſenti, ou ie.
Pret. *Ayant eté ſenti,* ou *ie.*
Gerund. *En* ſentant, ou ſentant.

After

After the ſame Manner are conjugated *Bouillir, Dormir, Mentir, Partir, Se repentir, Servir, Sortir.*

All theſe change the Conſonant that goes before *ir* of the *Infinitive*, into *S* in the *Preſent* of the *Indicative.*

Second Difference, *theſe ending in* ENIR:

Tenir, To hold.

Indicative.

Preſent. SING. *Je Tiens*, I hold, *&c.* PLU. *Nous tenons. Vous tenez. Il tennent*, We hold, *&c.*
Imperf. *Je tenois*, &c.
Perf. *Je tins. Tu tins. Il tint.* PLU. *Nous tinmes. Vous tintes. Ils tinrent.*
Compounds of theſe, *Jai, j'avois, j'eus*, &c. *tenu.*
Future Preſent. *Je tiendrai*, &c.
Future Paſt. *J'aurai tenu*, &c.
Conditional Preſent. *Je tiendrois*, &c.
Cond. Paſt. *J'aurois*, ou *j'euſſe tenu*, &c.
Imperfect. SING. *Tiens, qu'il tienne.* PLU. *Tenons, tenez, qu'ils tiennent.*

Subjunctive, &c.

Preſent. *Que je tienne*, &c. Plu. *Que nous tenions.*
Imperfect. *Que je tinſſe*, &c.
Preterit. *Que j'aie tenu*, &c.
Pluperfect. *Que j'euſſe tenu*, &c.
Infinitive Preſent. *Tenir.*
Infinitive Paſt. *Avoir tenu.*
Participle Active Preſent. *Tenant.*
Preterit. *Ayant tenu.*
Participle Paſſive Pre. *Tenu*, or *ue, etant tenu*, or *ue.*
Paſt. *Ayant eté tenu*, or *ue.*
Gerund. *En tenant*, or *tenant.*

So are conjugated all its Compounds, and *Venir* and all its. *Benir* has its Inflections as *Punir.*

Third Difference. Couvrir, To cover.

Indicative.

Preſent. SING. *Je* Couvre, I cover, *&c.* PLU. *Nous* couvrons, We cover, *&c.*
Imperfect. *Je* couvrois, &c.
Perfect. *Je* couvris, &c.
Compound. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus,* &c. couvert.
Future Preſent. *Je* couvrirai, &c.
Future Paſt. *J'aurai* couvert, &c.
Conditional Preſent. *Je* couvrirois, &c.
Conditional Paſt. *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe* couvert, &c.
Imperative. SING. Couvre, *qu'il* couvre. PLU. Couvrons, Couvrez, *qu'ils* couvrent.

Subjunctive.

Preſent. SING. *Que je* couvre, &c. PLU. *Que nous* couvrions &c.
Imperfect. *Que je* couvriſſe.
Perfect. *Que j'aie* couvert.
Pluperfect. *Que j'euſſe* couvert.
Infinitive Preſent. Couvrir.
Paſt. *Avoir* couvert.
Participle Active Preſent. Couvrant.
Paſt. *Ayant* couvert.
Participle Paſſive Preſent. Couvert, or *te.*
Paſt. *Ayant eté* couvert, or *te.*
Gerund. *En* couvrant, or couvrant.

So are conjugated Offrir, Ouvrir, and Soufrir, and their Compounds.

The Third Conjugation in Oir.

Indicative Preſent.

SING. *Je* reçois, I receive. *Tu* reçois, Thou receiveſt. *Il* reçoit, He receiveth. PLU. *Nous* recevons, We receive. *Vous* recevez, Ye receive. *Ils,* ou *elles* reçoivent, They receive.

Imperfect,

Imperfect.

SING. *Je recevois*, I received. *Tu recevois*, Thou receivedſt. *Il recevoit*, He received. PLU *Nous recevions*, We received. *Vous receviez*, Ye received. *Ils recevoient*, They received.

Preterit Definite.

SING. *Je reçûs*, I received. *Tu reçûs*, Thou receivedſt. *Il reçût*, He received. PLU. *Nous reçûmes*, We received. *Vous reçûtes*, Ye received. *Ils reçûrent*, They received.

Preterit Indefinite, or firſt Compound.

SING. *J'ai reçû*, I have received. *Tu as reçû*, Thou haſt, *&c.* *Il a reçû*, He has, *&c.* PLU. *Nous avons reçû*, We have received. *Vous avez reçû*, Ye have, *&c.* *Ils ont reçû*, They have, *&c.*

Pluperfect, or ſecond Compound.

SING. *J'avois reçû*, I had received. *Tu avois reçû*, Thou hadſt, *&c.* *Il avoit reçû*, He had, *&c.* PLU. *Nous avions reçû*, We had received. *Vous aviez reçû*, Ye had, *&c.* *Ils avoient reçû*, They had, *&c.*

Preterit anterior, or third Compound.

SING. *J'eus reçû*, I had received. *Tu eus reçû*, Thou hadſt, *&c.* *Il eut reçû*, He had, *&c.* PLU. *Nous eumes reçû*, We had received. *Vous eutes reçû*, Ye had, *&c.* *Ils eurent reçu*, They had, *&c.*

Future.

SING. *Je recevrai*, I ſhall *or* will receive. *Tu recevras*, Thou ſhalt, *&c.* *Il recevra*, He ſhall, *&c.* PLU. *Nous recevrons*, We ſhall *or* will receive. *Vous recevrez*, Ye ſhall, *&c.* *Ils recevront*, They ſhall, *&c.*

Future Paſt.

SING. *J'aurai* reçû, I ſhall *or* will have received. *Tu auras* reçû, Thou ſhalt, *&c.* *Il aura* reçû, He ſhall, *&c.* PLU. *Nous aurons* reçû, We ſhall *or* will have received. *Vous aurez* reçù, Ye ſhall, *&c.* *Ils auront* reçû, They ſhall, *&c.*

Conditional or Uncertain.

SING. *Je recevrois*, I ſhould, would, *or* could receive. *Tu recevrois*, Thou ſhouldſt, *&c.* *Il recevroit*, He ſhould, *&c.* PLU. *Nous recevrions* We ſhould, would, *or* could receive. *Vous recevriez*, Ye ſhould, *&c.* *Ils recevroient*, They ſhould, *&c.*

Conditional Paſt.

SING. *J'aurois*, ou *j'uſſe* reçû, I had, ſhould, *or* would have received. *Tu aurois*, ou *tu euſſes* reçû, Thou had, *&c.* *Il auroit*, ou *il eut* reçû, He had, *&c.* PLU. *Nous aurions*, ou *nous euſſions* reçû, We had, ſhould, *or* would have received. *Vous auriez*, ou *vous euſſiez* reçû, Ye had, *&c.* *Ils auroient*, ou *ils euſſent* reçû, They had, *&c.*

Imperative Preſent and Future.

SING. Reçois, Receive thou. *Qu'il reçoive*, Let him receive. PLU. *Reçevons*, Let us receive. Reçevez, Receive ye. *Qu'ils reçoivent*, Let them receive.

Conjunctive Preſent or Future.

SING. *Que je reçoive*, That I receive. *Que tu reçoives*, That thou, *&c.* *Qu'il reçoive*, That he, *&c.* PLU. *Que nous recevions*, That we receive. *Que vous receviez*, That ye, *&c.* *Qu'ils reçoivent*, That they, *&c.*

Imperfect.

SING. *Que je reçûſſe*, That I received, *or* might receive. *Que tu reçûſſes*, That thou, *&c.* *Qu'il reçût*, That he, *&c.*

he, &c. PLU. *Que nous* reçûssions, That we received, *or* might receive. *Que vous* reçûssiez, That ye, &c. *Qu'ils* reçûssent, That they, &c.

Preterit.

SING. *Que j'aie* reçû, That I have received. *Tu aies* reçû, Thou haſt, &c. *Il ait* reçû, He has, &c. PLU. *Que nous ayons* reçû, That we have received. *Que vous ayez* reçû, That ye have, &c. *Qu'ils ayent* reçû, That they have, &c.

Pluperfect.

SING. *Que j'euſſe* reçû, That I had, *or* ſhould, *or* would have received. *Que tu euſſes* reçû, That thou hadſt, &c. *Qu'il eût* reçû, That he had, &c. PLU. *Que nous euſſions* reçû, That we had, &c. *Que vous euſſiez* reçû, That ye had, &c. *Qu'ils euſſent* reçû, That they had, &c.

Infinitive Preſent. Recevoir, To receive.

Paſt. *Avoir* reçû, To have received.

Participle Active, Preſent. Recevant, Receiving.

Preterit. *Ayant* reçû, Having receiv'd.

Participle Paſſive, Preſent. Reçû, ou reçûe, ou *etant* reçû, reçûe, Received.

Preterit. *Ayant eté* reçû, ou reçûe, Having been received.

Gerund. *En* recevant, In receiving, ou Recevant, Receiving.

The Fourth Conjugation in Re.

Indicative Preſent.

SING. *Je* vends, I ſell. *Tu* vends, Thou ſelleſt. *Il* vend, He ſells. PLU. *Nous* vendons, We ſell. *Vous* vendez, Ye ſell. *Ils*, ou *elles* vendent, They ſell.

Imperfect

Imperfect Past.

SING. *Je* vend*ois*, I ſold. *Tu* vend*ois*, Thou ſoldeſt. *Il* vend*oit*, He ſold. PLU. *Nous* vend*ions*, We ſold. *Vous* vend*iez*, Ye ſold. *Ils* vend*oient*, They ſold.

Past Simple.

SING. *Je* vend*is*, I ſold. *Tu* vend*is*, Thou ſoldeſt. *Il* vend*it*, He ſold. PLU. *Nous* vend*imes*, We ſold. *Vous* vend*ites*, Ye ſold. *Ils* vend*irent*, They ſold.

Past Indefinite, or Compound of the Preſent.

SING. *J'ai* vend*u*, I ſold, *or* have ſold. *Tu as* vend*u*, Thou haſt ſold. *Il a* vend*u*, He has ſold. PLU. *Nous avons* vend*u*, We ſold, *or* have ſold. *Vous avez* vend*u*, Ye have ſold. *Ils ont* vend*u*, They have ſold.

Compound of the Imperfect, or Pluperfect.

SING. *J'avois* vend*u*, I had ſold. *Tu avois* vend*u*, Thou hadſt ſold. *Il avoit* vend*u*, He had ſold. PLU. *Nous avions* vend*u*, We had ſold. *Vous aviez* vend*u*, Ye had ſold. *Ils avoient* vend*u*, They had ſold.

Compound of the Preterit, or Paſt.

SING. *J'eus* vend*u*, I had ſold. *Tu eus* vend*u*, Thou hadſt ſold. *Il eut* vend*u*, He had ſold. PLU. *Nous eumes* vend*u*, We had ſold. *Vous eutes* vend*u*, Ye had ſold. *Ils eurent* vend*u*, They had ſold.

The Future.

SING. *Je* vend*rai*, I ſhall, *or* will ſell. *Tu* vend*ras*, Thou ſhalt, *&c.* *Il* vend*ra*, He ſhall, *&c.* PLU. *Nous* vend*rons*, We ſhall, *or* will ſell. *Vous* vend*rez*, Ye ſhall, *&c.* *Ils* vend*ront*, They ſhall, *&c.*

Compound

Compound of the Future, or Future paſt.

SING. *J'aurai* vendu, I ſhall have ſold. *Tu auras* vendu, Thou ſhalt have ſold. *Il aura* vendu, He ſhall have ſold. PLU. *Nous aurons* vendu, We ſhall have ſold. *Vous aurez* vendu, Ye ſhall have ſold. *Ils auront* vendu, They ſhall have ſold.

Conditional Preſent, or Uncertain.

SING. *Je* vendrois, I ſhould, *or* would ſell. *Tu* vendrois, Thou ſhouldſt, *&c.* *Il* vendroit, He ſhould, *&c.* PLU. *Nous* vendrions, We ſhould, *or* would ſell. *Vous* vendriez, Ye ſhould, *&c.* *Ils* vendroient, They ſhould, *&c.*

Conditional Paſt.

SING. *J'aurois*, ou *j'euſſe* vendu, I ſhould, *or* would have ſold. *Tu aurois*, ou *tu euſſes* vendu, Thou ſhouldſt, *&c.* *Il auroit*, ou *il eut* vendu, He ſhould, *&c.* PLU. *Nous aurions*, ou *nous euſſions* vendu, We ſhould, *or* would have ſold. *Vous auriez*, ou *vous euſſiez* vendu, Ye ſhould, *&c.* *Ils auroient*, ou *ils euſſent* vendu, They ſhould, *&c.*

Imperative Preſent, or Future.

SING. Vends, Sell thou. *Qu'il* vende, Let him ſell. PLU. Vendons, Let us ſell. Vendez, Sell ye. *Qu'ils* vendent, Let them ſell.

Subjunctive or Conjunctive Preſent, or Future.

SING. *Que je* vende, That I ſell. *Que tu* vendes, That thou ſell. *Qu'il* vende, That he ſell. PLU. *Que nous* vendions, That we ſell. *Que vous* vendiez, That ye ſell. *Qu'ils* vendent, That they ſell.

Imperfect.

SING. *Que je* vendiſſe, That I ſold, *or* might ſell. *Que tu* vendiſſes, That thou ſold, *&c.* *Qu'il* vendit, That he

he ſold, *&c.* PLU. *Que nous* vendiſſions, That we ſold, *&c.* *Que vous* vendiſſiez, That ye ſold, *&c.* *Qu'ils* vendiſſent, That they ſold, *&c.*

Preterit or Paſt.

SING. *Que j'aie* vendu, That I have ſold. *Que tu aies* vendu, That thou haſt ſold. *Qu'il ait* vendu, That he hath ſold. PLU. *Que nous ayons* vendu, That we have ſold. *Que vous ayez* vendu, That ye have ſold. *Qu'ils ayent* vendu, That they have ſold.

Pluperfect, or more than Paſt.

SING. *Que j'euſſe* vendu, That I had, *or* might have ſold. *Que tu euſſes* vendu, That thou hadſt, *&c.* *Qu'il eût* vendu, That he had, *&c.* PLU. *Que nous euſſions* vendu, That we had, *or* might have ſold. *Que vous euſſiez* vendu, That ye had, *&c.* *Qu'ils euſſent* vendu, That they had, *&c.*

Infinitive Preſent. Vendre, To ſell.

Paſt. *Avoir* vendu, To have ſold.

Participle Active, Preſent. Vendant, Selling.

Paſt. *Ayant* vendu, Having ſold.

Participle Paſſive, Preſent. Vendu, vendue, Sold. ou *Etant* vendu, vendue, Being ſold.

Paſt. *Ayant eté* vendu, ou vendue, Having been ſold.

Gerund. *En* vendant, In ſelling, *ou* vendant, Selling.

Firſt Difference, INDRE.

Craindre, To fear. *Indicative.*

Preſent. SING. *Je* Crains, I fear, *&c.* PLU. *Nous* craignons, We fear, *&c.*

Imperfect. *Je* craignois. Perf. *Je* craignis.

3 Comp. *J'ai, j'eus, j'aurai* craint.

Fut. Preſ. *Je* craindrai. Paſt. *J'aurai* craint.

Cond. Pre. *Je* craindrai. Paſt. *J'aurai*, ou *j'euſſe* craint.

Impera-

Imperative.

SING. Crains, *qu'il* craigne. PLU. Craignons, craignez, *qu'ils* craignent.

Conjunctive.

Pre. and Fut. *Que je* craigne. Imperf. *Que je* craignisse.
Perf. *Que j'aie* craint. Pluper. *Que j'eusse* craint.
Infin. Pre. Craindre. Past. *Avoir* craint.
Part. Act. Pre. Craignant. Past. *Ayant* craint.
Part. Pass. Pre. Craint, crainte, ou *etant* craint, crainte.
Past. *Ayant eté* craint, crainte.
Gerund. *En* craignant, ou craignant.

So are conjugated *Contraindre*, To constrain. *Ceindre*, To gird. *Feindre*, To feign. *Peindre*, To paint. *Teindre*, To dye. *Se plaindre*, To complain. *Oindre*, To anoint. *Joindre*, To joyn; and their *Compounds*.

Second Difference, AIRE.

Plaire, To please. *Indicative.*

Pre. SING. *Je* Plais, I please. PLU. *Nous* plaisons.
Imperf. *Je* plaisois. Perf. *Je* plus.
3 Compounds. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eusse* plu.
Fut. Pre. *Je* plairai. Past. *J'aurai* plu.
Cond. Pre. *Je* plairois. Past. *J'aurois*, ou *j'eusse* plu.

Imperative.

SING. Plais, *qu'il* plaise. PLU. plaisons, plaisez, *qu'ils* plaisent.

Conjunctive.

Pre. and Fut. *Que je* plaise. Imperf. *Que je* plusse.
Perf. *Que j'aie* plu. Pluper. *Que j'eusse* plu.
Infin. Pre. Plaire. Past. *Avoir* plu.
Part. Act. Pre. Plaisant. Past. *Ayant* plu.
Part. Pass. Pre. Plu, *é*, ou *etant* plu, plue.

Past.

Paſt. *Ayant eté* plu, ou *e.*
Gerund. *En* plaiſant, ou Plaiſant.

So are conjugated its Compounds, *Complaire,* To humour. *Deplaire,* To diſpleaſe. *Taire,* To conceal. And, *Se taire,* To hold one's Tongue.

Third Difference, UIRE.

Conduire, To conduct. *Indicative.*

Pre. SING. *Je* conduis, I conduct. PLU. *Nous* conduiſons.
Imperf. *Je* conduiſois. Perf. *Je* conduiſis.
3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus* conduit.
Fut. Pre. *Je* conduirai. Paſt. *J'aurai* conduit.
Cond. Pre. *Je* conduirois. Paſt. *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe* conduit.

Imperative.

SING. Conduis, *qu'il* conduiſe. PLU. Conduiſons, conduiſez, *qu'ils* conduiſent.

Conjunctive.

Pre. and Fut. *Que je* conduiſe. Imperf. *Que je* conduiſiſſe.
Perf. *Que j'aie* conduit. Pluperf. *Que j'euſſe* conduit.
Infin. Preſ. Conduire. Paſt. *Avoir* conduit.
Par. Act. Preſ. Conduiſant. Paſt. *Ayant* conduit.
Par. Paſ. Preſ. Conduit, *te,* ou *etant* conduit, *te.*
Paſt. *Ayant eté* conduit, *te.* Gerund. *En* conduiſant, ou conduiſant.

So are conjugated, *Deduire,* To deduct. *Introduire,* To introduce. *Produire,* To produce. *Reduire,* To reduce. *Traduire,* To tranſlate. *Cuire,* To bake, boil, *or* roſt. *Conſtruire,* To conſtrue, *or* build. *Luire,* To ſhine. *Reluire,* To gliſter. *Nuire,* To hurt. But the three laſt have their Participles, *Lui, Relui, Nui,* without *T.*

Fourth

Fourth Difference, OITRE *or* AITRE.

Connoitre, To know. *Indicative.*

Present. SING. *Je* connois, I know. PLU. *Nous* connoiſſons.
Imp. *Je* connoiſſois. Per. *Je* connus.
3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eu* connu.
Fut. Pr. *Je* connoitrai. Paſt. *J'aurai* connu.
Cond. Preſ. *Je* connoitrois. Paſt. *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe* connu.

Imperative.

SING. Connois, *qu'il* connoiſſe. PLU. Connoiſſons, Connoiſſez, *qu'ils* connoiſſent.

Conjunctive.

Preſ. and Fut. *Que je* connoiſſe. Imp. *Que je* connuſſe.
Per. *Que j'aie* connu. Plup. *Que j'euſſe* connu.
Inf. Pr. Connoitre. Paſt. *Avoir* connu.
Part. Act. Pr. Connoiſſant. Paſt. *Ayant* connu.
Part. Paſ. Preſ. Connu, *ue,* ou *Etant* connu, *ue.*
Paſt. *Ayant eté* connu, *ue.* Gerund. *En* connoiſſant, *ou* connoiſſant.

§ 1. *Of Paſſive Verbs.*

The *Active Verb* expreſſes an Action *produc'd by the Subject*, that is, by the *Noun* or *Pronoun* that is its *Nominative*; on the contrary, the *Paſſive Verb* expreſſes an Action *receiv'd by its Subject*, or *Nominative*: As for Example, Pierre *aime*, *Peter* loves: The Action of Loving is *produc'd* by *Peter*, who is the *Subject*, or *Nominative* of the Verb, and in this, Pierre *eſt aimé*, *Peter* is lov'd, *Peter* Nominative of the Verb *receives* the Action of Loving, which is *produc'd* by another.

They

They are all *form'd* from the Participle Paſſive of the Active Verbs, and *conjugated* with all the Tenſes of the Auxiliary Verb *Etre*. I ſhall only ſet down their firſt Perſons, through all their Moods and Tenſes.

Indicative.

Preſent. *Je ſuis* aimé, ou aimée, I am loved.
Imperfect. *Jetois* aimé, ou aimée, I was lov'd.
Paſt Definite. *Je fus* aimé, ou aimée, I was lov'd.
1 Com. *Jai eté* aimé, ou aimée, I have been lov'd.
2 Com. *Javois eté* aimé, ou aimée, I had been lov'd.
3 Com. *Jeus eté* aimé, ou aimée, I had been lov'd.
Fut. Pr. *Je ſerai* aimé, ou aimée, I ſhall or will be lov'd.
Fut. Paſt. *Jaurai eté* aimé, ou aimée, I ſhall have been lov'd.
Con. Preſent. *Je ſerois* aimé, ou aimée, I ſhould be lov'd.
Con. Paſt. *Jaurois*, ou *jeuſſe eté* aimé, ou aimée, I would have been lov'd.

Imperative Preſent, or Future.

Sois aimé, ou aimée, Be thou lov'd.

Conjunctive.

Pref. and Fut. *Que je ſois* aimé, ou aimée, That I be lov'd.
Imp. *Que je fuſſe* aimé, ou aimée, That I might be lov'd.
Pret. *Que jai eté* aimé, ou aimée, That I have been lov'd.
Plup. *Que jeuſſe eté* aimé, ou aimée, That I had been lov'd.

Infinitive.

Pref. *Etre* aimé, ou aimée, To be lov'd.
Pret. *Avoir eté* aimé, ou aimée, To have been lov'd.

Participle paſſive.

Pref. Aimé, ou aimée, Lov'd.
Pret. *Ayant eté* aimé, ou aimées, Having been lov'd.

All

All these Tenses have *Aimés* for the Masculine, and *Aimées* for the Feminine Gender in the Plural.

No Passive Verbs can be form'd but from Active Verbs *properly so call'd*, because there being no other Verb but the Active, which marks an Action *passing from the Subject*; so only the Action expres's'd by the Active Verb can *be receiv'd* by a Subject *different* from that which produc'd it. And to *form a Passive Verb* from an Active, is, by making what was the *Nominative* of the Active, the *Regimen* of the Passive Verb; and the *Regimen* of the Active become the *Nominative* of the Passive Verb; as in this Phrase, *Dieu aime les Hommes: Aime* is an Active Verb, *Dieu* is the *Nominative*, and *les Hommes* is the *Regimen* of it. And in this, which is the same put in the Passive, *Les hommes sont aimés de Dieu*; *sont aimes* is a Passive Verb, *les hommes* is the *Nominative*, and *de Dieu* the *Regimen* of it.

The Regimen of Passive Verbs is always an *Ablative* or an *Accusative* with the Preposition *Par*; as, *Je suis connu du Roi: J'ai été maltraité par mon frere.*

§ 2. *Of Neutral Verbs.*

Neutral Verbs either *express no Action*, or an Action that *goes not out* from the *Subject* that acts; as, *Regner*, *Exceller*, are Neutral Verbs, which properly don't express Actions, but only a *Condition* or *Quality* in the Subject.

Travailler, *Dormir*, *Aller*, are Verbs that really expreſs Actions, but they are Neutral, becauſe theſe Actions don't *paſs out from the Subject* that acts, that is, from the Perſon who labours, ſleeps, or goeth.

They are alſo call'd Neutral, becauſe they are neither Subſtantive Verbs, nor Active Verbs, *properly ſo call'd*; and they are diſtinguiſh'd from Active Verbs in this, that theſe Words, *Quelqu' un*, or *Quelque choſe* can't be put immediately after them, as after Active Verbs: Thus, *Venir*, *Languir*, are Neutral Verbs, becauſe we cannot ſay, *Venir quelqu'un*, *venir quelque choſe*, nor *languir quelqu'un*, *languir quelque choſe*.

They are conjugated as Active Verbs with the Tenſes of the Auxiliary Verb *Avoir* in their Compound Tenſes, except theſe Fifteen, *Arriver*, To arrive. *Entrer*, To go, or come in. *Monter*, To go, or come up. *Aller*, To go. *Paſſer*, To paſs, or go by. *Retourner*, To return. *Tomber*, To fall. *Sortir*, To go, or come out. *Mourir*, To die. *Accourir*, To run to. *Partir*, To depart. *Venir*, To come. *Choir*, To fall. *Deſcendre*, To come down. *Naitre*, To be born. And their Compounds, whoſe compound Tenſes are conjugated with the Auxiliary Verb *Etre*.

In theſe Verbs, as in the Paſſive, the Participle Paſſive *varies*, according to the Difference of *Gender* and *Number*, except when it comes before the Infinitive of another Verb, where

it

it *remains the ſame*; as, *Il eſt allé voir*, He is gone to ſee. *Elle eſt allé voir*, She is gone to ſee.

Paſſer, *Monter*, *Sortir*, with their Compounds, are ſometimes conjugated with the Auxiliary *Avoir*; as, *J'ai paſſé*, *J'ai monté*, *J'ai ſorti*.

Several others of them are irregular in other Caſes which ſhall be obſerv'd in the Conjugation of Irregular Verbs.

§ 3. *Of Reciprocal, or Reflected Verbs.*

A *Reciprocal* Verb is one whoſe *Nominative* and *Regimen* have a *Reciprocal Relation* together, ſignifying the *ſame Perſon* or the *ſame Thing*, that is, the *Subject acting* acts upon its *ſelf*; thus, *Je me bleſſe*, is a Reciprocal Verb, becauſe I both *wound* and am *wounded*.

The Conjunctive Pronouns *me*, *te*, *ſe*, for the Singular, and *nous*, *vous*, *ſe*, for the Plural, are made uſe of, for *expreſſing* this *Relation*; and they are plac'd betwixt the Nominative and the Verbs, except in Interrogations, where they are placed firſt.

There are *Two Sorts* of Reciprocal Verbs, to wit, thoſe that are ſuch by *Signification*, and thoſe that are ſuch by *Expreſſion*: The firſt ſignify the Action of a Subject, which *acts directly*, or *indirectly* on its ſelf; as, *Je me loue*, *vous vous faites tort*. And there are three Kinds of them, *viz.* the *Direct*, *Indirect*, and *Paſſive*.

The *Direct* are thoſe whoſe *Nominative* ſignifies the *ſame Thing* or *Perſon* with their *abſolute Regimen*; as when I ſay, *Pierre ſe felicite*, that is, *Pierre ſelicite lui-meme*: *Pierre* and *lui-meme* are the ſame Thing, or the ſame Perſon.

The *Indirect* are thoſe whoſe *Nominative* ſignifies the *ſame Thing*, or *Perſon*, as the *relative Regimen*; and which have beſides an abſolute Regimen *different* from the *Nominative* of the Verb; as when I ſay, *Pierre ſe donne un habit*, that is, *Pierre donne un habit à lui-meme*: *Pierre* and *lui-meme* are the ſame Perſon, and *un habit* is different from *Pierre*.

The Conjunctive Pronouns are always in the *Accuſative*, as the abſolute Regimen of the *direct* Reciprocal Verbs, and in the *Dative*, as the relative Regimen of the *Indirect*.

The *Paſſive* Reciprocals are ſuch, whoſe *Nominative* expreſſes a *Thing inanimate*, and *incapable of Action*; as, when I ſay, *Cette Hiſtoire ſe raconte differemment*: *Hiſtoire* is an inanimate Thing and incapable of acting. And they are call'd Paſſive, becauſe they may be rendred by the *Paſſive*, or, which is the ſame Thing, by the ſupplying general Pronoun *On*: Thus, inſtead of *Cette hiſtoire ſe raconte differemment*, we may ſay, *Cette hiſtoire eſt racontée differemment*, or *On raconte cette hiſtoire differemment*.

There are *ſome Occaſions*, where the *Nominative* of Reciprocal Paſſive Verbs *expreſſes a Perſon*, but then the Verb can't be taken but in a Paſſive Signification; thus, when 'tis ſaid,

Suſanne

Suſanne s'eſt trouvée innocente du Crime dont on l'accuſoit; it is the ſame, as if it had been ſaid, *Suſanne a eté trouvée innocente du Crime dont on l'accuſoit*.

The Conjunctive Pronouns are always reckon'd to be in the *Accuſative* in the Paſſive Reciprocals, as in the direct; and every Active Verb may *become Reciprocal*, when the *acting Subject* can *act* upon it ſelf; thus, *Je loue* is an Active Verb, and it becomes Reciprocal, when I ſay, *Je me loue*.

The Reciprocal Verbs by *Expreſſion* are theſe, which, *without ſignifying* the Action of a Subject *acting on itſelf*, are *joyn'd* and *conjugated* with the conjunctive Pronouns, *me, te, ſe, nous, vous, ſe*, and they may be *look'd on* as real *Neutral Verbs*, which are conjugated as the Reciprocal Verbs by *Signification*; ſuch are, *Je me repens, je me meurs, je m'en vais*; theſe Verbs *expreſs* only *ſimple Actions*, and import no more, than if I ſaid, *I'm repenting, dying*, or *going*, where we ſee the Subject does *not* at all *act* upon itſelf.

All Reciprocal Verbs, whether by *Signification, Direct, Indirect*, or *Paſſive*, or by *Expreſſion*, are conjugated with the Auxiliary Verb *Etre*, in their compound Tenſes: And I ſhall conjugate one of them through all the *Moods, Tenſes*, and *Firſt Perſons* Singular and Plural, for an *Example* and Rule for others.

Indicative.

Preſent. SING. *Je me* leve. PLU. *Nous nous* levons.
Imp. SING. *Je me* levois. PLU. *Nous nous* levions.
Paſt Def. SING. *Je me* levai. PLU. *Nous nous* levames.
Paſt Ind. SING. *Je me ſuis* levé, or levée. PLU. *Nous nous ſommes* levés, or levées.
Pluper. SING. *Jem'etois* levé, or levée. PLU. *Nous nous etions* levés, or levées.
Comp. Paſt. SING. *Je me fus* levé, or levée. PLU. *Nous nous fumes* levés, or levées.
Future. SING. *Je me* levrai. PLU. *Nous nous* levrons.
Fut. Paſt. SING. *Je me ſerai* levé, or levée. PLU. *Nous nous ſerons* levés, or levées.
Cond Preſ. SING. *Je me* levrois. PLU. *Nous nous* levrions.
Cond. Paſt. SING. *Je me ſerois*, or *je me fuſſe* levé, e. PLU. *Nous nous ſerions*, or *fuſſions* levés, or levées.

Imperative.

SING. Leve-*toi*. PLU. Levons-*nous*.

Subjunctive.

Preſ. SING. *Que je me* leve. PLU *Que nous nous* levions.
Imp. SING. *Que je me* levaſſe. PLU. *Que nous nous* levaſſions.
Pret. SING. *Que je me ſois* levé, or levée. PLU. *Que nous nous ſoions* levés, or levées.
Pluper. SING. *Que je me fuſſe* levé, or levée. PLU *Que nous nous fuſſions* le é, or levées.

Infinitive.

Preſent. *Se* lever. Preterit. *S'etre* levé, or levée.

Participle active.

Preſent. *Se* levant. Pret. *S'etant* levé, or levée.

Parti-

Participle paſſive.

Preſent. Levé, or levée.

Gerund.

En ſe levant, or *ſe levant*.

The *Direct Reciprocal* Verbs have always an *abſolute Regimen*, which is the *Conjunctive Pronoun*, and ſometimes a *Relative* diſtinct from the Nominative of the Verb; for Example, *S'aimer*, *S'admirer* have no other Regimen, but the conjunctive Pronoun: But *S'amuſer*, *S'offenſer* may alſo have a *relative Regimen*; for we ſay, *Je m'amuſe, au jeu. Vous vous offenſez de mes paroles:* It is even ſo with the *Paſſive Reciprocals*; as, *Ce bruit ſe repand. Les Metaux ſe tirent des entrailles de la Terre.*

The *Indirect Reciprocals* have always the Conjunctive Pronoun for the relative Regimen, and an abſolute Regimen *different* from the *Nominative* of the Verb; as in this Phraſe, *Vous vous attirez le mépris de tout le monde*; that is, *Vous attirez à vous le mepris de tout le monde.* *A vous* is the relative Regimen, and *le mépris* is the abſolute.

The Reciprocal Verbs by *Expreſſion* have no abſolute Regimen, ſince they are *Neutral* Verbs, and the Conjunctive Pronouns, which are joyn'd to them, have *no Signification*, but they generally have relative Regimens; for we ſay, *Je me repens de ma faute. Vous vous appercevez de mon chagrin. Je m'en vais à Londres.*

Of the Conjugation of Verbs in a negative and interrogative Senſe, and with the Particles EN, *and* Y.

Hitherto I have laid down *Rules*, how to conjugate all Kind of Verbs, except thoſe call'd *Imperſonals*, which I have kept laſt, in an *affirmative Senſe*: I ſhall now proceed to give Directions, how any Verb whatſoever may be conjugated in a *negative* Senſe, by a *ſingle*, or *double Interrogation*, ſince our Thoughts can't be communicate or expreſs'd, but by one of theſe Four Ways.

In Affirmations you will have obſerv'd, that the *Nominative*, *Conjunctive*, and *Supplying* Pronoun *On* go always before the Verb, and ſo they do in Negations; for *expreſſing* of which the *French* commonly *uſe Two negative Particles*, the Firſt whereof is always *Ne*, and plac'd *betwixt* the Nominative and the Verb, and the other is *pas*, or *point*, or *rien*, or *plus*, or *jamais*, or *guére*, or *mot*, or *preſque*, or *goute*, or *que*, or ſome other negative Particle; and theſe are plac'd *after* the Verb in the *ſimple Tenſes*, and *after* the Auxiliary, in the *compound Tenſes*.

The Way to conjugate a Verb with a ſimple Interrogation, is by *placing* the Nominative, Conjunctive, or Supplying Pronoun *after* the Verb, in the *ſimple Tenſes*, and *after* the auxiliary Verb, in the *Compound*, with a Stroke of Union (-) commonly call'd a *Hyphen*.

But

But if the Nominative of the Verb be a *Noun*, or any *Pronoun* that is not a *Conjunctive*, the ſaid Noun or Pronoun is *repeted* by a conjunctive Pronoun of the third Perſon anſwering to it; as, Is the King at Dinner? *Le Roi eſt-il à table?* Are theſe Gentlemen at Home? *Ces Meſſieurs ſont-ils au logis?* Hath any Body done you Hurt? *Quelqu'un vous a-t-il fait du mal?* Hath that Lady entertain'd you well? *Cette Dame vous a-t-elle bien reçu?*

The Method of conjugating a Verb with a *double Interrogation*, that is, with a *Negative* joyn'd to the *Interrogation*, You are to obſerve the ſame Rule as in the Simple, only by *placing Ne before* the Verb, and the Auxiliary, in all the Tenſes; and *Pas*, or the other Negative *after* the Verb and perſonal Pronoun, in the *ſimple Tenſes*, and after the auxiliary and perſonal Pronoun in the *compound*. I ſhall give Examples of all, for the clearer Comprehenſion of the above Rules.

Active Verbs.

Simple Tenſe.

NEGA. AFFIR.	Sing.	*ne* *Je* porte	*pas.* *Tu* portes	*ne* *Il* porte	*pas.*
N. A.	Plu.	*ne* *Nous* portons	*pas.* *Vous* portez	*ne* *Ils* portent	*pas.*

Compound.

N. A.	S.	*n'* *Je ai* porté.	*pas,* *Tu as* porté.	*n'* *Il a* porté.	*pas*

Pl. *Nous*

N. A. } P. n' pas n' pas n' pas
Nous avons porté. *Vous avez* porté. *Ils ont* porté.

Simple Tenſe, Interrogation.

D. } S. *ne pas. ne pas. ne pas.*
S. } *Porte-je* *Portes-tu* *Porte-t-il*

D. } P. *ne pas. ne pas. ne pas.*
S. } *Portons-nous* *Portez-vous* *Portent-ils*

Compound.

D. } S. n' pas n' pas n' pas
S. } *ai-je* porté. *as-tu* porté. *a-t-il* porté.

D. } P. n' pas n' pas n' pas
S. } *avons-nous* porté. *avez-vous* porté. *ont-ils* porté.

Paſſive Verbs, Negation *and* Affirmation.

Simple Tenſe.

N. A. } S. *ne pas* n' pas n' pas
Je ſuis porté, ée. *Tu es* porté. *Il eſt* porté.

N. A. } P. *ne pas* n' pas
Nous ſommes portés, ées. *Vous etes* portés.
ne pas
Ils ſont portés.

N. A. } S. n' pas n' pas n' pas
Je ai eté porté. *Tu as eté* porté. *Il a eté* porté.

N. A. } P. n' pas n' pas
Nous avons eté portés. *Vous avez eté* portés.
n' pas
Ils ont eté portés, ées.

Paſſive Verbs, Double *and* Single *Interrogation.*

D } S. *ne pas* n' pas n' pas
S } *Suis-je* porté, ée. *Es-tu* porté. *Eſt-il* porté.

Pl. *ne*

D. S. P. *ne pas n' pas*
Sommes-nous portés, ées. *Etes-vous* portés.
ne pas
ſont-ils portés.

D. S. S. *n' pas n' pas n' pas*
ai-je eté porté. *as-tu* eté porté. *a-t-il* eté porté.

D. S. P. *n' pas n' pas*
avons-nous eté portés, ées. *avez-vous* eté portés.
n' pas
ont-ils eté portés.

Reciprocal Verbs, Negation *and* Affirmation.

N. A. S. *ne pas. ne pas. ne pas.*
Je me leve *Tu te* leves. *Il ſe* leve

N. A. P. *ne pas. ne pas. ne pas.*
Nous nous levons *Vous vous* levez *Ils ſe* levent

N. A. S. *ne pas ne pas ne pas*
Je me ſuis levé, ée. *Tu t'es* levé. *Il s'eſt* levé.

N A. P. *ne pas ne pas*
Nous nous ſommes levés, ées. *Vous vous etes* levés.
ne pas
Ils ſe ſont levés, ou levées.

Reciprocal Verbs, Double *and* Single *Interrogation.*

D. S. S. *ne pas. ne pas. ne pas.*
Me leve-*je* *Te* leves-*tu* *Se* leve-*t-il*

D. S. P. *ne pas. ne pas.*
Nous levons-*nous* *Vous* levez-*vous*
ne pas.
Se levent-*ils*

D. S. S. *ne pas ne pas ne pas*
Me ſuis-je levé, ée. *T'es-tu* levé. *S'eſt-il* levé.

Plu. *ne*

D. S. P.	*Nous ſommes-nous*	*ne*	*pas*	levés.	*Vous etes-vous*	*ne*	*pas*	levés.
	Se ſont-ils	*ne*	*pas*	levés, ées.				

Nota, That *Neutral Verbs* are conjugated with *Interrogation* and *Negation* as *Active Verbs*, except thoſe that take the *auxiliary* Verb *Etre*, in their Compound *Tenſes*, which follow the Rule of *Paſſive* and *Reciprocal* Verbs, by *varying* their Participle Paſſive according to the *Gender* and *Number*.

Impersonal Verbs *obſerve* the *ſame* Rule in the above *Caſes*, as other Verbs.

When a Verb is conjugated with the Particles *Y*, or *En*, they go before the Verb, except in the ſecond Perſon Singular, and in the firſt and ſecond Perſons of the Plural of the Imperative, when they go after; and when they are both together in a Sentence, *Y* goes before *En*.

Of Verbs that do not follow the general Rules for their Primitive Tenſes, and therefore called Irregular.

All the Verbs of the firſt Conjugation follow the general Rule, and are conjugated like *Aimer*, except *Aller* and *Puer*, which are Irregular. *Aller* is ſometimes a Reciprocal Verb by Expreſſion, and takes *En* with it, therefore I ſhall give the Conjugation of both together, the Difference betwixt the *Reciprocal* and the *Simple* being in the upper Line.

Indicative

Indicative Present.

	m'en	t'en	s'en
S.	Je vais.	Tu vas.	Il va.
	nous en	vous en	s'en
P.	Nous allons.	Vous allez.	Ils vont.

Imperfect.

	m'en	t'en	s'en
S.	Je allois.	Tu allois.	Il alloit.
	nous en	vous en	s'en
P.	Nous allions.	Vous alliez.	Ils alloient.

Past Simple.

	m'en	t'en	s'en
S.	J allai.	Tu allas.	Il alla.
	nous en	vous en	s'en
P.	Nous allames.	Vous allates.	Ils allerent.

Past Indefinite, or first Compound.

	m'en	t'en	s'en
S.	Je suis allé, ée.	Tu es allé.	Il est allé.
	nous en	vous en	s'en
P.	Nous sommes allés.	Vous etes allés.	Ils sont allés.

Pluperfect, or second Compound.

	m'en	t'en	s'en
S.	Je etois allé.	Tu etois allé.	Il etoit allé.
	nous en	vous en	s'en
P.	Nous etions allés.	Vous etiez allés.	Ils etoient allés.
	m'en	t'en	s'en
S.	Je fus allé.	Tu fus allé.	Il fut allé.

P. Nous

nous en vous en s'en
P. Nous fumez allés. Vous futes allés. Ils furent allés.

Future Preſent.

m'en t'en s'en
S. Je irai. Tu iras. Il ira.

nous en vous en s'en
P. Nous irons. Vous irez. Ils iront.

Future Paſt.

m'en t'en s'en
S. Je ſerai allé. Tu ſeras allé. Il ſera allé.

nous en vous en s'en
P. Nous ſerons allés. Vous ſerez allés. Ils ſeront allés.

Conditional Preſent.

m'en t'en s'en
S. Je irois. Tu irois. Il iroit.

nous en vous en s'en
P. Nous irions. Vous iriez. Ils iroient.

Conditional Paſt.

m'en t'en s'en
S. Je ſerois, ou *fuſſe* allé. Tu ſerois, &c. allé. Il ſeroit, &c. allé.

nous en vous en
P. Nous ſerions, ou *fuſſions* allés, Vous ſeriez, &c. allés.
s'en
Ils ſerioent, &c. allés.

Imperative.

T'en s'en
S. va. Qu'il aille.

Nous-en. Vous-en. s'en
P. allons allez. Qu'ils aillent.

Subjunctive,

Subjunctive, or Conjunctive Preſent.

m'en t'en s'en
S. Que je aille. Que tu ailles. Qu'il aille.

nous en vous en
P. Que nous allions. Que vous alliez.
s'en
Qu'ils aillent.

Imperfect.

m'en t'en s'en
S. Je allaſſe. Tu allaſſes. Il allât.

nous en vous en s'en
P. Nous allaſſions. Vous allaſſiez. Ils allaſſent.

Preterperfect.

m'en t'en s'en
S. Je ſois allé, ou ée. Tu ſois allé. Il ſoit allé.

nous en vous en
P. Nous ſoyons allés. Vous ſoyez allez.
s'en
Ils ſoyent allés.

Pluperfect.

m'en t'en s'en
S. Je fuſſe allé. Tu fuſſes allé. Il fût allé.

nous en vous en
P. Nous fuſſions allés. Vous fuſſiez allés. Ils
s'en
fuſſent allés.

Infinitive.

s'en s'en
Preſent. aller. Preterit. etre allé, ée.

Participle

Participle active.

Preſent. *s'en allant.* Preterit. *s'en etant allé, &c.*

Participle paſſive.

Preſent. *Allé, Allée.*

Gerund.

En s'en allant. or *s'en allant.*

Puer, To ſtink.

Indicative.

Preſent. *Je pus. Tu pus. Il put. Nous puons. Vous puez. Ils puent.*
Imperfect. *Je puois. Tu puois. Il puoit.*
Perfect. *Je puai.*
Part. Preſent. *Puant.* Paſt. *Pué.*

All the reſt is wanting, and inſtead of this Verb *Sentir mauvais*, To ſmell ill, is more generally us'd.

Nota. That tho' *Envoyer*, To ſend, be a regular Verb, yet *J'enverrai* in the Future has obtain'd, inſtead of *J'envoyerai.*

Irregular Verbs of the ſecond Conjugation.

Courir, To run.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
Preſent. *Je cours.*	*Que je coure.*
Imperfect. *Je courois.*	*Que je couruſſe.*
Perfect. *Je courus.*	*Que j'ae couru.*
3 Com. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus courru.*	*Que j'euſſe couru.*
Fu. Pref. *Je courrai.*	Imperative.
Paſt. *J'aurai courru.*	*Cours, qu'il cours, &c.*
Co. Pr. *Je courrois.*	
Co. Paſt. *J'aurois*, ou *j'euſſe couru.*	

Infinit.

Infinit. *Courir.* Past. *Avoir Couru.*
Part. *Courant, ayant couru.* Past. *Couru.*

So are conjugated its Compounds, *Discourir*, To discourse. *Encourir*, To incur. *Parcourir*, To run over. *Recourir*, To have Recourse. *Secourir*, To succour. *Concourir*, To concur. *Accourir*, To run to, or together.

Cueillir, To pluck, or gather.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
Pres. *Je Cueille.*	*Que je cueille.*
Imperf. *Je cueillois.*	*Que je cueillisse.*
Perf. *Je cueillis.*	*Que j'aye cueilli.*
2 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus cueilli.*	*Que j'eusse cueilli.*
Fut. P. *Je cueillerai.*	Imperative.
Past. *J'aurai cueilli.*	*Cueille, qu'il cueille.*
Cond. Pre. *Cueillerois.*	
Past. *J'aurois, ou j'eusse cueilli.*	

Infin. Pre. *Cueillir.* Past. *Avoir cueilli.*
Part. *Cueillant, ayant cueilli.* Past. *Cueilli, ie.*

Faillir, To fail.

This Verb is Defective, and seldom used in the Present and Imperfect Tenses of either Mood; but we say,

Perf. *Je faillis.* *Je faillisse.*
2 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus failli.* *J'eusse failli.*
Fut. *Je Faillirai, ou je Faudrai.*
Cond Pres.
Cond. Past. *J'aurois, ou j'eusse failli.*
Infin. Pre. *Faillir.* Past. *Avoir failli.*
Part. *Faillant, ayant Failli.* Past. *Failli.*

Fuir, To fly.

Indicative.	Subjunctive
Pre. *Je fuis.*	*Que je fuie.*
Imperf. *Je fuyois.*	*Que je fuisse.*

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
Pert. *Je fuis.*	*Que j'aye fui.*
3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus fui.*	*Que j'euſſe fui.*
Fut. *Je fuirai.* Paſt. *j'aurai fui.*	
Cond. Pre. *Je fuirois.*	Imperative.
C. Paſt. *J'aurois, ou j'euſſe fui.*	*Fui, qu'il fuie.*
Infin. Pre. *Fuir.* Paſt. *Avoir fui.*	
Part. *Fuyant, ayant fui.*	Paſſ. *Fui.*

Mourir, To die.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
Preſ. *Je meurs.*	*Que je meure.*
Imper. *Je mourois.*	*Que je mouruſſe.*
Perf. *Je mourus.*	*Que je ſois mort.*
3 Com. *Je ſuis, j'etois, je fus mort.*	*Que je fuſſe mort.*
Fut. Pre. *Je mourrai.*	
Paſt. *Je ſerai mort.*	Imperative.
Cond. Pre. *Je mourrois.*	*Meurs, qu'il meure.*
Cond Paſt. *Je ſerois mort.*	
Infin. *Mourir, etre mort.*	
Particip. *Mourant, etant mort, mort, te.*	

Se mourir, To be a dying, is us'd in the Preſent and Imperfect, thus *Je me meurs, Je me mourois.*

Ouïr, To hear.

This Verb is ſeldom us'd, except in the Perfect Definite, *J'ouïs*; and in the Imperfect of the Subjunctive *J'ouiſſe*; and in the Compound Tenſes, *J'ai, J'avois, j'eus Oui*; inſtead of it, *Entendre* is us'd.

Querir, To fetch.

This Verb is only us'd in the Infinitive, and only there, when any of theſe three Verbs, *Aller, Venir*, or *Envoyer*, go before it: But its Compounds, *Acquerir*, To acquire, or purchaſe, *Conquerir*, To conquer, *Requerir*, To require, are thus conjugated.

Indicative.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
Pre. *J'acquiers.* Plu. *Nous acquerons.*	*Que j'acquiere,*
Imper. *J'acquerois.*	*Que j'acquisse.*
Perf. *J'acquis.*	*Que j'aie acquis,*
2 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus acquis.*	*Que j'eusse acquis.*
Fut. Pre. *J'acquerrai.*	
Fut. Paft. *J'aurai acquis.*	Imperative.
Cond. Pre. *J'acquerrois.*	*Acquiers, qu'il acquiere,* &c.
Cond. Paft. *J'aurois acquis.*	
Infinit. *Acquerir, avoir acquis.*	
Part. *Acquerant, ayant acquis, acquis, ſe.*	

Saillir, To leap.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
Pre. *Je ſaille,* ou *je ſaillis.*	*Que je ſaille,*
Imper. *Je ſaillois.*	*Que je ſailliſſe,*
Perf. *Je ſaillis.*	*Que j'aie ſailli,*
2 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus ſailli.*	*Que j'euſſe ſailli.*
Fut. Pre. *Je ſaillirai,* Paſt. *J'aurai ſailli.*	
Co. *Je ſaillirois,* P. *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe ſailli.*	Imperative.
Infin. *Saillir, avoir ſailli.*	
Part. *Saillant, ayant ſailli, ſailli.*	

So are conjugated its Compounds, *Aſſaillir,* To aſſault, *Treſſaillir,* To leap.

Vêtir, To cloath.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
Pre. *Je vêts.*	*Que je vête.*
Imperf. *Je vêtois.*	*Que je vêtiſſe.*
Per. *Je vêtis.*	*Que j'aie vêtu.*
2 Comp. *J'ai j'avois, j'eus vêtu.*	*Que j'euſſe vêtu.*
Fut. Pre *Je vêtirai, j'aurai vêtu.*	Imperative.
Cond. *Je vêtirois, J'aurois,* ou *jeuſſe vêtu.*	*Vêts, qu'il vête,* &c.
Infin. *Vêtir, avoir vêtu.*	
Part. *Vêtant, ayant vêtu, vêtu, uë.*	

So is conjugated its Compound, *Revêtir*, To clothe; but *Travestir*, To disguise, and *Investir*, To invest, are regular, and conjugated like *Punir*.

Irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation.

The Auxiliary Verb *Avoir*, is already conjugated at large. *Choir*, To fall, is only us'd in the Perfect, *Je chûs* Preterperfect. *Je fuis chû*; and in the Infinitive. Its Compound *Dechoir*, To decay, or waste, is thus conjugated.

Indicative Pre. *Je Dechois*. Imperf. *Je dechéois*. Per. *Je dechûs*. 3 Comp. *Je fuis, J'etois, je fus dechû*. Fut. Pre. *Je decherrai*. Paft. *Je serai dechû*. Cond. Pre. *Je decherrois*. Paft. *Je serois*, ou *je fusse dechû*. Imperative. ——— Conjunctive Pre. *Que je dechée*. Imperf. *Que je dechûsse*. Perf. *Que je fois dechû*. Pluper. *Que je fusse dechû*. Infinit. *Dechoir, etre dechû*. Part. *Dechéant, etant dechû*. *Dechû, uë*.

Its other Compound *Echoir*, To happen, fall out, or expire, is us'd Impersonally; as is *Faloir*, it must: Of both which we shall speak amongst the *Impersonal Verbs*.

Mouvoir, To move.

Indic. Pre. *Je meus, Nous mouvons*. Imper. *Je mouvois*. Perf. *Je mûs*. 3 Comp. *J'ai, J'avois, J'eus mû*. Fut. Pre. *Je mouvrai*. Paft. *J'aurai mû*. Cond. Pre. *Je mouvrois*. Paft. *J'aurois*, ou *j'eusse mû*. Imperative. *Meus, qu'il meuve*, &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je meuve*. Imper. *Que je mûsse*. Perf. *Que j'ai mû*. Pluper. *Que j'eusse mû*. Infinit. *Mouvoir, avoir mû*. Part. *Mouvant, ayant mû*. *Mû, Muë*.

So are conjugated its Compounds, *Emouvoir*, To move with Violence, and *Promouvir*, To promote. But *Demouvoir*, To deter, is turn'd obsolete.

Pleuvoir will be found among the Impersonals.

Pouvoir,

Pouvoir, To be able, or can.

Indicative Pres. *Je puis*, or *je peux*. Plu. *Nous pouvons*. Imperf. *Je pouvois*. Perf. *Je pûs*. 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus pû*. Fut. *Je pourrai*. Past. *J'aurai pû*. Cond. Pre. *Je pourrois*. Past. *J'aurois*, ou *j'eusse pû*. Imperative. ——— Conjunctive. Pre. *Que je puisse*. Imp. *Que je pûsse*. Perf. *Que j'aye pû*. Pluper. *Que j'eusse pû*. Infinit. *Pouvoir, avoir pû*. Participles. *Pouvant, ayant pû, Pû*.

Sçavoir, or *Savoir*, To know.

Indicat. Pre. *Je sai*. *Nous savons*, &c. Imperf. *Je savois*. Perf. *Je sûs*. 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus sû*. Fut. *Je saurai*. Past. *J'aurai sû*. Cond. Pre. *Je saurois*. Past. *J'aurois*, ou *j'eusse sû*. Imperative. *Sache, qu'il sache*, &c. Conjunctive. *Que je sache*. Imp. *Je sûsse*. Perf. *J'aye sû*. Pluperf. *J'eusse sû*. Infinitive. *Savoir, avoir sû*. Particip. *Sachant, ayant sû*. *Sû, sûë*.

Seoir, To sit, or sit down.

This Verb is turn'd *obsolete*, but when used *Impersonally*, and then it signifies, *To become*; and we say, *Il sied, il seoit, il siera*: When it is *Reflected*, it has these Tenses; *Je me sierai*, I shall sit down. *Seyez-vous*, Sit ye down. *Seyons nous*, Let us sit down. And *se seoir*, To set one's self down: But, instead of both, *S'asseoir*, which has the same Signification, is made use of, and thus conjugated.

Indicative Pres. *Je m'assieds*. Plu. *Nous, nous asseyons*. Imper. *Je m'asseyois*. Perf. *Je m'assis*. 3 Comp. *Je me suis, je m'étois, je me fus, assis*. Fut. *Je m'assierai*, ou *je m'asseyerai*. Past. *Je me serai, assis*. Cond. *Je m'assierois*, ou *je m'asseyerois*. Past. *Je me serois*, ou *Je me fusse, assis*. Imperative. *Assieds-toi, qu'il s'asseye*, &c. Conjunctive. *Que je m'asseye*. Imperf. *Que je m'assisse*. Perf. *Que je me sois, assis*. Pluperf.

Que je me fusse assis. Infinitive *S'asseoir, être assis.* Particip. *S'asseyant, étant assis, assis, ou assise.*

Asseoir is sometimes an Active Verb, and then it is conjugated with *Avoir.*

Se Rasseoir, To sit again; and *Surseoir,* To put off, or delay, are conjugated after the same Manner; only the Future of *Surseoir* is *je surseirai.*

Valoir, To be worth.

Indicative Pre. *je Vaux. Nous valons.* Imp. *Je Valois* Perf. *Je valus.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus valu.* Fut. *Je vaudrai.* Past. *J'aurai valu.* Cond. *Je vaudrois* Past. *J'aurois, ou j'eusse valu* Imperative, *Vaux, qu'il vaille, &c.* Conjunctive Pre. *Que je vaille.* Imperf. *Que je valusse.* Perf. *Que j'aye valu* Puperf *Que j'eusse valu.* Infinitive *Valoir, avoir valu.* Particip. *Valant, ayant valu. Valu.*

So is conjugated *Prevaloir,* To prevail. But in the third Persons of the Present of the Conjunctive, it has *qu'il prevale,* and *qu'ils prevalent.*

Voir, To see.

Indicative Pre. *Je vois. Nous voyons.* Imperf. *Je voyois.* Perf. *Je vis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus vû.* Fut. *Je verrai* Past. *J'aurai vû* Cond *Je verrois.* Past. *J'aurois, ou j'eusse vû* Imperative. *Voi, qu'il voye, &c.* Conjunctive. *Que je voye* Imperf. *Que je visse.* Perf. *Que j'aye vû.* Pup. *Que j'eusse vû* Infinit. *Voir, avoir vû.* Particip. *Voyant, ayant vû. Vû, vûë.*

After the same Manner are conjugated *Revoir,* To see again. *Entrevoir,* To have a Glimpse of. *Prévoir,* To forsee. *Pourvoir,* To provide. But the Future of *Prevoir* is, *je prevoirai;* and the Perfect of *Pourvoir* is, *j'ai pourvus;* and its Future, *je pourvoirai.*

Vouloir

Vouloir, To will, or be willing.

Indicative Pre. *Je veux. Nous voulons.* Imperf. *Je voulois.* Perf. *Je voulus.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus voulu.* Fut. *Je voudrai.* Paſt. *J'aurai voulu.* Cond. *Je voudrois.* Paſt. *J'aurois*, ou *j'euſſe voulu.* Imperative. ——— Conjunctive. Pre. *Que je veuille.* Imperf. *Que je vouluſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aye voulu.* Plup. *Que j'euſſe voulu.* Infinitive. *Vouloir, avoir voulu.* Particip. *Voulant, ayant voulu. Voulu.*

Irregular Verbs of the Fourth Conjugation.

Battre, To beat.

Indicative Pre. *Je Bats. Nous battons.* Imperf. *Je battois.* Perf. *Je battis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus battu.* Fut. *Je battrai.* Paſt. *J'aurai battu.* Cond. *Je battrois.* Paſt. *J'aurois*, ou *j'euſſe battu.* Imperative. *Bats, qu'il batte*, &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je batte.* Imperf. *Que je battiſſe.* Perf *Que j'aie battu.* Pluperf. *Que j'euſſe battu.* Infinit. *Battre, avoir battu.* Particip. *Battant, ayant battu, battu, battuë.*

So are conjugated its Compounds, *Abbatre*, To pull down. *Combattre*, To fight. *Debattre*, To debate, &c.

Boire, To drink.

Indicative Pre. *Je bois. Nous beuvons.* Imperf. *Je beuvois.* Perf. *Je bûs.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus bû.* Fut. *Je boirai.* Paſt. *J'aurai bû.* Cond. *Je boirois.* Paſt. *J'aurois*, ou *j'euſſe bû.* Imperative. *Bois, qu'il boive, beuvons, beuvez, qu'ils boivent.* Conjunctive Pre. *Que je boive. Que nous beuvions.* Imperf. *Que je bûſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie bû.* Pluperf. *Que j'euſſe bû.* Infinitive. *Boire, avoir bû.* Participles. *Beuvant, ayant bû, Bû, buë.*

Braire, To bray like an Aſs, is ſeldom us'd, but in theſe Expreſſions, *L'âne brait*, &c.

Bruire, To ſound, is only us'd in the Infinitive and Participle Preſent, *Bruyant*, Sounding.

Circoncire, To circumciſe.

Indicative Pre. *Je circoncis. Nous circoncisons.* Imperf. *Je circoncisois.* Perf. *Je circoncis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, Jous circoncis.* Fut. *Je circoncirai.* Paſt. *J'aurai circoncis.* Cond. *Je circoncirois.* Paſt. *J'aurois, ou j'eusse circoncis.* Imperative. *Circoncis, qu'il circonciſe, &c.* Conjunctive Pre. *Que je circonciſe.* Imperf. *Que je circonciſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie circoncis.* Pluperf. *Que j'eusse circoncis.* Infinitive. *Circoncire, avoir circoncis.* Participles. *Circoncisant, ayant circoncis. Circoncis, circonciſe.*

Clore, To cloſe, incloſe, or ſhut.

This Verb is not us'd but in the Infinitive, the Future *Je clorrai*, and the Part. Paſſive *Clos, cloſe*; neither are its Compounds *Eclore*, To hatch. *Enclore*, To incloſe, and *Forclore*, To ſhut out, us'd but in theſe Tenſes. *Conclurre*, To conclude, another of its Compounds, is thus conjugated,

Indicative Pre. *Je conclus. Nous concluons.* Imperf. *Je concluois.* Perf. *Je conclus.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, Jeus conclu.* Fut. *Je conclurrai.* Paſt. *J'aurai conclu.* Cond. *Je conclurrois.* Paſt. *J'aurois, ou j'eusse conclu.* Imperative. *Conclus, qu'il conclue, &c.* Conjunctive Pre. *Que je conclue.* Imperf. *Que je concluſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie conclu.* Pluperf. *Que j'eusse conclu.* Infinitive. *Conclurre, avoir conclu.* Particip. *Concluant, ayant conclu. Conclu, concluë.*

So is *Exclurre*, To exclude, conjugated; except, that its Participle Paſſive is *Exclus.*

Reclurre, To ſhut in, is only us'd in the Infinitive, and in the Tenſes form'd of the Particip. Paſſive, *Reclus.* It is ſometimes us'd Reciprocally, and we ſay, *Se reclurre, il s'eſt reclus, &c.*

Confire,

Confire, To preſerve, or candy.

Indicative Pre. *Je confis. Nous confiſſons.* Imperf. *Je confiſſois.* Pret. *Je confis,* 3 Comp. *J'ai, J'avois, j'eus confit.* Fut. *Je confirai.* Paſt. *J'aurai confit.* Cond. *Je confirois.* Paſt. *J'aurois, ou j'euſſe confit.* Imperative. *Confi, qu'il confiſſe,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je confiſſe.* Impert. *Que je confiſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie confit.* Pluper. *Que j'euſſe confis.* Infinit. *Confire, avoir confis.* Particip. *Confiſſant, ayant confit.* *Confis, confite.*

Coudre, To ſew, or ſtitch.

Indicative Pre. *Je Cous. Nous couſons.* Imperf. *Je couſois.* Perf. *Je couſus.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, J'avois, J'eus couſu.* Fut. *Je coudrai.* Paſt. *J'aurai couſu.* Cond. *Je coudrois.* Paſt. *J'aurois, J'euſſe couſu.* Imperative. *Cous, qu'il couſe,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je couſe.* Imperf. *Que je couſuſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie couſu.* Pluper. *Que j'euſſe couſu.* Infinitive. *Coudre, avoir couſu.* Particip. *Couſant, ayant couſu.* *Couſu, couſue.*

After the ſame Manner are conjugated *Recoudre*, To ſew again, and *Decoudre*, To unſew.

Croire, To believe.

Indicative Pre. *Je Crois. Nous croyons.* Imperf. *Je croyois.* Perf. *Je crus.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, J'avois, j'eus cru.* Fut. *Je croirai.* Paſt. *J'aurai cru.* Cond. *Je croirois.* Paſt. *J'aurois, ou j'euſſe cru.* Imperative. *Croi, qu'il croye,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je croye.* Imperf. *Que je cruſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie cru.* Pluperf. *Que j'euſſe cru.* Infinitive. *Croire, avoir cru.* Participles. *Croyant, ayant cru.* *Cru, crue.*

Dire, To ſay, or tell.

Indicative Pre. *Je Dis. Nous diſons. Vous dites. Ils diſent.* Imperf. *Je diſois.* Perf. *Je dis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, J'avois, J'eus dit.* Fut. *Je dirai.* Paſt. *J'aurai dit.* Cond.

Cond. *Je dirois.* Paſt. *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe dit.* Imperative. *Dis qu'il diſe,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je diſe.* Impert. *Que je diſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie dit.* Pluper. *Que j'euſſe dit.* Infinitive, *Dire, avoir dit.* Participles, *Diſant, ayant dit. Dit, dite.*

Note, The Poets ſometimes uſe *Qu'il die* in the Preſent of the Conjunctive, inſtead of *qu'il diſe.*

Redire, To ſay again: *Contredire,* To contradict: *Se dedire,* To retract: *Interdire,* To interdict: *Médire,* To ſpeak ill of: *Prédire,* To foretell: And *Maudire,* To curſe: Are conjugated, as *Dire.* Except, that *Contredire, ſe dedire, Interdire, Médire,* and *Prédire* have *Vous contrediſez, vous vous dediſez, interdiſez, mediſez, prediſez,* in the ſecond Perf. Plural. of the Preſ. of the Indicative. And *Maudire* has two *S's* in the 3 Plural Perſons of the Pre. of the Indicative; thus, *Nous maudiſſons, Vous maudiſſez, Ils maudiſſent.* And in the Imperative, *Qu'il maudiſſe,* &c. And through the Preſent of the Conjunctive, *Que je maudiſſe,* &c. And the Active Participle is *Maudiſſant.*

Ecrire, To write.

Indicative Pre. *J'Ecris, Nous Ecrivons.* Imperf. *J'écrivois.* Perf. *J'écrivis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eu écrit.* Fut. *J'écrirai.* Paſt, *J'aurai écrit.* Cond. *J'écrirois.* Paſt, *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe écrit.* Imperative, *écri, qu'il écrive,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que j'écrive.* Imperf. *Que J'écriviſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie écrit.* Pluper. *Que j'euſſe écrit.* Infinitive, *Ecrire, avoir écrit.* Participles, *Ecrivant, ayant écrit. écrit, écrite.*

Etre, I have already conjugated this Verb at large, being a Subſtantive Verb, and one of the Auxiliaries.

Exclure, being a Compound of *Clore* is already taken Notice of.

Faire, To do, *or* make.

This Verb being omitted in the Liſt of Irregular Verbs, *Page* 98, that Defect is here ſupplied.

Indicative

Indicative Pre. *Je Fais. Nous faiſons. Vous faites. Ils font.* Imperf. *Je faiſois.* Perf. *Je fis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus fait.* Fut. *Je ferai.* Paſt. *J'aurai fait.* Cond. *Je ferois.* Paſt. *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe fait.* Imperative, *Fais, qu'il faſſe,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je faſſe.* Imperf. *Que je fiſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie fait.* Pluperf. *Que j'euſſe fait.* Infinitive, *Faire, avoir fait.* Participles, *Feſant; ayant fait. Fait, faite.*

Thus are conjugated its Compounds, *Contrefaire,* To counterfeit; *Defaire,* To undo. *Refaire,* To make up again; and *Satisfaire,* To ſatisfy.

Frire, To fry, this Verb is only us'd in the Preſent of the Indicative, *Je frit*; and in the Participle Paſſive, *Frit*: For the other Moods and Tenſes *Friçaſſer* is made uſe of.

Lire, To read.

Indicative Pre. *Je Lis, Nous liſons.* Imperf. *Je liſois.* Perf. *Je lûs.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus lû.* Fut. *Je lirai.* Paſt, *J'aurai lû.* Cond. *Je lirois.* Paſt, *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe lû.* Imperative, *Lis, qu'il liſe,* &c. Conjunct. Pre. *Que je liſe.* Imperf. *Que je lûſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie lû.* Pluperf. *Que j'euſſe lû.* Infinitive. *Lire, avoir lû.* Participles, *Liſant, ayant lû. Lû, lûë.*

Luire, To ſhine, and its Compound, *Reluire,* To gliſter, are conjugated like *Conduire,* with the Difference remark'd in *Page* 126.

Mettre, To lay, *or* Put.

Indicative Pre. *Je mets, Nous mettons.* Imperf. *Je mettois.* Perf. *Je mis* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus mis.* Fut. *Je mettrai.* Paſt, *J'aurai mis.* Cond. *Je mettrois.* Paſt, *J'aurois,* ou *j'euſſe mis.* Imperative, *Mets, qu'il mette,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je mette.* Imperf. *Que je miſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie mis.* Pluperf. *Que j'euſſe mis.* Infinitive, *Mettre, avoir mis.* Participles, *Mettant, ayant mis. Mis, miſe.*

So

So are conjugated its Compounds, *Admettre*, To admit. *Commettre*, To commit. *Demettre*, To turn out. *Omettre*, To omit. *Permettre*, To permit. *Promettre*, To promise. *Remettre*, To remit, or put again.

Moudre, To grind.

Indicative Pre. *Je Mous. Nous moulons.* Imperf. *Je moulois.* Perf. *Je moulus.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus moulu.* Fut. *Je moudrai.* Past. *J'aurai moulu.* Cond. *Je moudrois.* Past. *J'aurois*, ou *j'eusse moulu.* Imperative, *Mous, qu'il moule*, &c. Conj. Pre. *Que je moule.* Imperf. *Que je moulusse.* Perf. *Que j'aie moulu.* Pluperf. *Que j'eusse moulu.* Infinitive, *Moudre, avoir moulu.* Participles, *Moulant, ayant moulu. Moulu, mouluë.*

Its Compounds; *Remoudre*, To grind again; *Emoudre*, To grind on a Stone, follow the same Rule.

Naitre, To be born.

Indicative Pre. *Je Nais. Nous naissons.* Imperf. *Je naissois.* Perf. *Je naquis.* 3 Comp. *Je suis, j'etois, je fus né.* Fut. *Je naitrai.* Past, *Je serai né.* Cond. *Je naitrois.* Past. *Je serois*, ou *je fusse né.* Imperative, *Nais, qu'il naisse*, &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je naisse.* Imperf. *Que je naquisse.* Perf. *Que je sois né.* Pluperf. *Que je fusse né.* Infinitive, *Naitre*, etre *né.* Particip. *Naissant, etant né. Né, née.*

Nuire, To hurt, is conjugated like *Conduire*, with the Difference observ'd in Page 126.

Prendre, To take.

Indicative Pre. *Je Prens. Nous prenons.* Imperf. *Je prenois.* Perf. *Je pris.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus pris.* Fut. *Je prendrai.* Past, *J'aurai pris.* Cond. *Je prendrois.* Past, *J'aurois*, ou *j'eusse pris.* Imperative, *Prens, qu'il prenne*, &c. Conjunctive, *Que je prenne.* Impert. *Que je prisse.* Perf. *Que j'aie pris.*

Pluperf.

Pluperf. *Que j'eusse pris.* Infinitive, *Prendre, avoir pris.* Participles, *Prenant, ayant pris. Pris, prise.*

After the same Method its Compounds, *Apprendre,* To learn; *Comprendre,* To apprehend; *Desapprendre,* To unlearn; *Se méprendre,* To mistake; *Reapprendre,* To learn anew; *Reprendre,* To resume; and *Surprendre,* To surprise; are conjugated.

Rire, To laugh.

Indicative Pre. *Je Ris. Nous rions.* Imperf. *Je riois.* Perf. *Je ris.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus ri.* Fut. *Je rirai.* Past, *J'aurai ri.* Cond. *Je rirois.* Past, *J'aurois, ou j'eusse ri.* Imperative, *Ris, qu'il rie,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je rie.* Imperf. *Que je risse.* Perf. *Que j'aie ri.* Pluperf. *Que j'eusse ri.* Infinitive, *Rire, avoir ri.* Particip. *Riant, ayant ri, Ri.*

So is conjugated, *Sourire,* To smile.

Rompre, To break.

Indicative Pre. *Je Romps. Nous rompons.* Imperf. *Je rompois.* Perf. *Je rompis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus rompu.* Fut. *Je romprai.* Past, *J'aurai rompu.* Cond. *Je romprois.* Past, *J'aurois, ou j'eusse rompu.* Imperative, *Romps, qu'il rompe,* &c. Conjunctive, *Que je rompe.* Imperf. *Que je rompisse.* Perf. *Que j'aie rompu.* Pluperf. *Que j'eusse rompu.* Infinitive, *Rompre, avoir rompu.* Participles, *Rompant, ayant rompu. Rompu, rompuë.* So is *Corrompre,* To corrupt.

Soudre, To solve, is only us'd in the Infinitive: But its Compound, *Resoudre,* To resolve, is thus conjugated.

Indicative Pre. *Je Resous. Nous resolvons.* Imperf. *Je resolvois.* Perf. *Je resolus.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus resolu.* Fut. *Je resoudrai.* Past, *J'aurai resolu.* Cond. *Je resoudrois.* Past, *J'aurois, ou j'eusse resolu.* Imperative, *Resous, qu'il resolve,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je resolve.* Imperf. *Que je resolusse.* Perf. *Que*

Que j'aie resolu. Pluperf. *Que j'eusse resolu.* Infinitive, *Resoudre, avoir resolu.* Participles, *Resolvant, ayant resolu. Resolu, resoluë.*

So are conjugated *Absoudre,* To absolve: *Dissoudre,* To dissolve: But they have no Perf. Definite: And their Part. Passive are *Absous, te, Dissous, te.*

Suffire, To suffice.

Indicative Pre. Je *suffis. Nous suffisons.* Imperf. Je *suffisois.* Perf. Je *suffis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus suffi.* Fut. Je *suffirai.* Past, *J'aurai suffi.* Cond. Je *suffirois.* Past, *J'aurois,* ou *j'eusse suffi.* Imperative, *Suffi, qu'il suffise,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je suffise.* Impert. *Que je suffisse.* Perf. *Que j'aie suffi.* Pluperf. *Que j'eusse suffi.* Intinitive, *Suffire, avoir suffi.* Participles, *Suffisant, ayant suffi. Suffi.*

Suivre, To follow.

Indicative Pre. Je *suis. Nous suivons.* Imperf. Je *suivois.* Perf. Je *suivis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus, suivi.* Fut. Je *suivrai.* Past, *J'aurai suivi.* Cond. Je *suivrois.* Past, *J'aurois,* ou *j'eusse suivi.* Imperative, *Sui, qu'il suive,* &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je suive.* Imperf. *Que je suivisse.* Perf. *Que j'aie suivi.* Pluperf. *Que j'eusse suivi.* Infinitive, *Suivre, avoir suivi.* Participles, *Suivant, ayant suivi. Suivi, suivie.*

Its Compounds, *s'Ensuivre,* To follow from; and *Poursuivre,* To pursue; follow the same Rule.

Traire, To milk.

Indicative Pre. Je *Trais.* P. ——. Imperf. ——. Perf. ——. 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus trait.* Fut. Je *trairai.* Past, *J'aurai trait.* Cond. Je *trairois.* Past, *J'aurois,* ou *j'eusse trait.* Imperative, *Trais* —— Conjunctive Pre. ——. Imperf. ——. Perf. *Que j'aie trait.* Pluperf. *Que j'eusse trait.* Infinitive,

Traire,

Traire, avoir trait. Participles, *Trayant, ayant trait. Trait, traite.*

So are conjugated *Abſtraire*, To abſtract: *Diſtraire*, To diſtract: *Extraire*, To extract: *Rentraire*, To fine-draw: *Souſtraire*, To ſubſtract: But they may be us'd in the Plural, thus, *Nous abſtrayons. Vous abſtrayez. Ils abſtrayent*, &c.

Vaincre, To overcome.

Indicative Pre. ——. *Nous vainquons.* Imperf. *Je vanquois.* Perf. *Je vainquis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus vaincu.* Fut. *Je vaincrai.* Paſt. *J'aurai vaincu.* Cond. *Je vaincrois.* Paſt. *J'aurois*, ou *j'euſſe vaincu.* Imperf. *Qu'il vainque*, &c. Conjunctive Pre. *Que je vainque.* Imperf. *Que je vanquiſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie vaincu.* Pluperf. *Que j'euſſe vaincu.* Infinit. *Vaincre, avoir vaincu.* Particip. *Vainquant, ayant vaincu. Vaincu, vaincuë.*

Its Compound *Convaincre*, To convince, or convict, has the Singular of the Preſ. of the Indicative; thus, *Je convaincs. Tu convaincs. Il convainct.* All the reſt as the Simple.

Vivre, To live.

Indicative Pre. *Je vis. Nous vivons.* Imperf. *Je vivois.* Perf. *Je vecus*, ou *vequis.* 3 Comp. *J'ai, j'avois, j'eus vecu.* Fut. *Je vivrai.* Paſt. *J'aurai vecu.* Cond. *Je vivrois.* Paſt. *J'aurois*, ou *j'euſſe vecu.* Imperative, *Vi, qu'il vive*, &c. Conjunctive *Que je vive.* Imperf. *Que je vecuſſe.* Perf. *Que j'aie vecu.* Pluperf. *Que j'euſſe vecu.* Infinitive, *Vivre, avoir vecu.* Participles, *Vivant, ayant vecu. Vecu.*

And ſo are its Compounds, *Revivre*, To revive; and *Survivre*, To out-live; conjugated.

§. *Of*

§. Of Impersonal Verbs.

An *Impersonal* is a Verb that is only employ'd in the third Person Singular; as, *Il faut, il importe.*

It is further distinguished from other Verbs, in so far as, taking the Pronoun *Il* before it; it never expresses an Action, nor has any Subject or Nominative.

The Pronoun *Il*, which goes before the Impersonal Verbs is not the *Nominative* of the *Verb*, because that Pronoun does not *supply* the the Place of any particular *Noun*, as in other Verbs; thus when I say, *Il pleut, Il neige*, I can't put any Noun in Place of *Il*, as in *Il aime.* I can put a Noun in Place of *Il*, and say, *Pierre aime.*

There are two Sorts of Impersonal Verbs, *viz.* those that are *preceded* by the Pronoun, *Il*, and those that are *preceded* by the general supplying Pronoun *On.*

There are some that are Impersonal by their Nature, and are never used otherwise; such as, *Il pleut, il faut, il importe*, &c. There are others formed from other Verbs, and consequently are not always Impersonal; such as, *Il convient, il paroit*, since they can be conjugated through all their Persons.

The Way to know when these last Verbs are Impersonal or not, is, when you can't put a Noun in the Place of the Pronoun *Il*, you are sure it is Impersonal: And when you can

can put a Noun in its Place, you may conclude the Verb is not Impersonal; as in this Phrase, *Voila un bon chapeau il convient à ma tête*, There's a good Hat, it fits my Head: I can put *Chapeau* in Place of *il*, and say, *Ce chapeau convient à ma tête*; consequently, *Il convient* is not an Impersonal Verb. In this other Phrase, *Voila un bon chapeau il convient que je l'achete*, There's a good Hat, 'tis fit that I should buy it; I can't put *Chapeau*, or any other Noun in Place of *il*; and it would be absurd to say, *Ce chapeau convient que je l'achete*; consequently, *Il convient* is there an Impersonal Verb.

All the Verbs *Substantive*, *Active*, *Neutral*, *Passive*, and *Reciprocal* Verbs may be used *Impersonally*, by putting the general Pronoun *On* before the third Person Singular of all their Tenses; thus, *On est*, *on aime*, *on tombe*, *on est puni*, *on se promene*, are Impersonal Verbs, and they differ from the others preceded by the Pronoun *Il*, in so far, as *On* is always the Nominative of the Verbs, to which it is join'd; and these Verbs express Actions, when they are Active, and they have the same Regimens and Properties, as if they were preceded by another Nominative: In a Word, they are only Impersonals, because following *On*, they are only used in the third Person Singular.

It is to be observed, that when *On* is before Active Verbs, it gives them *indirectly* a Passive Signification; and if they have no abso-

lute Regimen, this Regimen may be look'd on as the Nominative of the Passive Verb; as when I say, *On Raconte cette Histoire*, *On estime la sagesse*, it is as much as if I said, *Cette Histoire est Racontée*, That Story is told. *La Sagesse est estimée*, Wisdom is had in Esteem.

The Impersonal Verbs are conjugated as others, *except* that we only *use* the third Person Singular preceded by *Il*, or *On*: I shall conjugate some of them that are only used Impersonally, and of greatest Use in Practice.

Il faut, It must, &c.

Indicative Pre. *Il faut.* Imperf. *Il falloit.* Perf. *Il fallut.* 3 Comp. *Il a, il avoit, il eut fallu.* Fut. *Il faudra.* Past, *Il aura fallu.* Cond. *Il faudroit.* Past, *Il auroit*, ou *il eût fallu.* Conjunctive, *Qu'il faille.* Imperf. *Qu'il fallût.* Perf. *Qu'il ait fallu.* Pluperf. *Qu'il eût fallu.* Particip. Active Past, *Ayant fallu.*

The Moods and Times wanting here, are not in Use.

Il y a, There is.

Indicative Pre. *Il y a.* Imperf. *Il y avoit.* Perf. *Il y eut.* 3 Comp. *Il y a, il y avoit, il y eut eu.* Fut. *Il y aura.* Past, *Il y aura, eu.* Cond. *Il y auroit*, Past, *Il y auroit*, ou *il y eût eu.* Imperative, *Qu'il y ait.* Conjunctive Pre. *Qu'il y ait.* Imperf. *Qu'il y eût.* Perf. *Qu'il y ait eu.* Pluperf. *Qu'il y eût eu.* Infinitive, *Y avoir, y avoir eu.* Participles, *y ayant, y ayant eu.*

Il pleut, It rains.

Indicative Pre. *Il pleut.* Imperf. *Il pleuvoit.* Perf. *Il pleût.* 3 Comp. *Il a, il avoit, il eut plû.* Fut. *Il pleuvra.* Past, *Il aura plû.* Cond. *Il pleuvroit.* Past, *Il auroit*, ou *il eut plû.* Imperative, *Qu'il pleuve.*

Conjunctive,

Conjunctive, *Qu'il pleuve.* Imperf. *Qu'il plût.* Perf. *Qu'il ait plû.* Pluperf. *Qu'il eut plû.* Infinitive, *Pleuvoir, avoir plû.* Participles, *Pleuvant, ayant plû.*

Il vaut mieux, It is better.

Indicative Pre. *Il vaut mieux.* Imperf. *Il valoit mieux.* Perf. *Il valut mieux.* Comp. *Il a, il avoit, il eut mieux valu.* Fut. *Il vaudra mieux.* Comp. *Il aura mieux valu.* Cond. *Il vaudroit mieux.* Paſt. *Il auroit, ou il eût mieux valu.* Impe. ——. Conjunctive Pre. *Qu'il vaille mieux.* Imperf. *Qu'il valût mieux.* Perf. *Qu'il ait mieux valu.* Plupert. *Qu'il eut mieux valu.* Infinitive, *Valoir mieux, avoir mieux valu.* Participles, *Valant mieux, ayant mieux valu.*

There are Impersonal Verbs in every Conjugation, such as in the First, *Il niege*, It snows. *Il grele*, It hails, *&c.* In the Second, *Il souvient*, One remembers; *On reuſſit*, One succeeds. These I have mentioned, besides others in the third. And *Il ſuffit*, it suffices; *Il eſt*, ou *c'eſt*, It is; *Il plait*, It pleases; *On dit*, 'tis said; *Il paroit*, It appears; *Il fait*, It is; which is us'd in this Signification, instead of *Etre*, when we speak of the Weather; as, *Il fait beau tems*, It is fine Weather: Or, before such Words as these, *Bon, mal, meilleur, dangereux*; as, *Il fait bon ici*, It is good being here; *Il fait dangereux ſur mer*, It is dangerous being at Sea, *&c.* All which are conjugated like the personal Verbs from which they are deriv'd.

The Personal Pronoun *Se* is sometimes us'd with Impersonal Verbs to express a Passive Signification in the Verb; as, *Il ſe boit de bon*

Vin en France, Good Wine is drunk in *France*. *Il ſe mangéde bon Boeuf en* Angleterre, Good Beef is eaten in *England*. *La plus belle Aſſemblée du Monde ſe trouve maintenant à* Edinbourg, The fineſt Aſſembly of the Univerſe is now to be found at *Edinburgh*.

Laſtly, as I have before obſerv'd, *Impersonal Verbs* follow the ſame Rules as to Interrogation and Negation, and when joyn'd with the Particles *En* and *Y* as *Perſonals*.

CHAP. V. *Of Participles.*

THE *Participle* is an Adjective which has *ſome Properties* of a Verb, and is ſo call'd, becauſe it partakes of the Nature of both: It partakes of the Nature of an Adjective Noun, in ſo far as it is ſuſceptible of *Gender*, *Number*, and *Caſe*, and is *joyn'd with* a Subſtantive. And it borrows the Properties of the Verb, in having its *Signification* and *Regimen*, and ſometimes marks the *Preſent*, and ſometimes the *Paſt*, as has been ſeen in the Conjugations.

There are Two Sorts of *Participles*, the *Active* and the *Paſſive*; the *Active* are thoſe, that have an *Active Signification*, or who expreſs the Subject, which makes the Action of the Verb; as when I ſay, *Aimant*, Loving; *Ayant lû*, Having read: It is the ſame, as if I ſaid, *Qui aime*; Who loves; *Qui a lû*; Who has read;

The

The Active Participles reſemble Adjectives, in ſo far as like them, they only expreſs *Qualities*: They alſo ſuppoſe always a Subſtantive Noun *expreſs'd* or *underſtood*, to which they refer; and laſtly, are of both Genders. And they differ from them, (1.) In ſo far as they have the ſame *Abſolute* and *Relative* Regimens, as the Verbs whereof they are Participles; thus we ſay, *Un jeunne homme preferant l'Etude au jeu*, A young Man preferring Study to Game. (2.) In ſo far as they are *indeclinable*, that is, they change not their Termination, and that they are the *ſame* for *Maſculine* and *Feminine*, for the Singular and Plural; thus we ſay indifferently, *Un homme*, ou *une femme* --- liſant *de bons livres*. *Des hommes*, ou *des femmes* --- liſant *de bons Livres*, A Man or Woman, *or* Men *or* Women --- reading good Books: In which Phraſes the Subſtantives are of different Genders and Numbers; and yet the Participle *Liſant* does not change.

The Active Participle is *ſometimes declinable*, for we ſay, *Une Paſſion dominante, des paſſions dominantes*, A reigning, *or* reigning Paſſions. *Un Jardin charmant, des Jardins charmans*, A delicious, *or* delicious Gardens; but then they are no more Participles, they are *purely Adjective Nouns*; becauſe they can no more have the Regimen of the Verb after them; thus we can ſay, *Une femme ſuppliante*, A Woman begging Aſſiſtance; but, *Une femme ſuppliante ſes Juges*, A Woman ſoliciting her Judges, can't

be ſaid; the Active indeclinable Participle muſt be us'd, *Une femme ſuppliant ſes Juges.*

But ſince the Prepoſition *En* is often *ſuppreſſed* in the Gerund, and, by ſo doing, it *reſembles* the Active Participles in *Expreſſion*; I ſhall give Rules how to diſtinguiſh them. (1.) By underſtanding the Nature of both, the Gerund deſigns only a *Circumſtance*, *Manner*, or *Mean* of the Action; whereas, the Participle marks always the *State* of a Thing, a *Reaſon*, or *Cauſe* of Action. (2.) Tho' the Prepoſition *En* be often ſuppreſs'd before the Gerund, it may nevertheleſs be *reſtor'd*, except in the Gerunds, *Ayant* and *Etant*; whereas that Prepoſition can never be plac'd before an Active Participle, without ſpoiling the Senſe, and doing Violence to Practice; as for Example, if I ſay, *Vous le perdez, le flatant comme vous faites*, You looſe him, *or* ruin him by flattering him; *Flatant* only expreſſes a Manner or Mean of looſing him, and *En* may be join'd in this Manner, *Vous le perdez en le flatant*, conſequently, *Flattant* is here a Gerund.

But in this Phraſe, *Je vous en ai parlé Croyant vous faire plaiſir*, I ſpeak of him, her, *or* it believing to pleaſe you; *Croyant* marks a Reaſon or Cauſe of the Action of ſpeaking, I ſpeak, becauſe I believ'd it would pleaſe you: And we could not ſay, without offending Practice, *en croyant*, by Conſequence *Croyant* is an Active Participle.

Paſſive

Paſſive Participles are thoſe who have a *Paſſive Signification*, or who expreſs the *Subject receiv'd* by the Action of the Verb; thus, when I ſay, *Un Ecolier aimé de ſes Maitres*, I give the Idea of a Scholar, who *receives* the Action of *loving* produc'd by his Maſters. The Properties they borrow from the Verbs are to ſignify the Action of the Verb *as received*, and to have the ſame *Regimen* with the *Paſſive Verb*; as, *Le vice eſt deteſté par les honnêtes Gens*, Vice is abhorr'd by virtuous Men: *La vertu eſt eſtimée de tout le Monde*, Virtue is eſteem'd by all Mankind: So we alſo ſay, *La vertu eſtimée de tout le monde, le vice deteſté par les honnêtes Gens.*

The Paſſive Participles are to be *look'd on* as Adjectives, in ſo far as they *expreſs* a Quality, that they *refer* always to a *Subſtantive Noun*, and that they are *ſuſceptible* of Gender, Number, and Caſe. They are us'd in Verbs to form all the compound Tenſes, only by joining to them the Tenſes of the Auxiliary Verb, *Avoir* and *Etre*; and us'd as ſuch, they are ſometimes declinable, and ſometimes not.

They are *generally* indeclinable, when they come after *Avoir*, and when a Pronoun in the Accuſative does *not go before*: It may be ſaid without Variation, *J'ai reçu, nous avons reçu*; But we muſt ſay, *La lettre que j'aie reçuë*, or *que nous avons reçuë*, The Letter *I* or *we* have received: Becauſe there the Participle Paſſive

reçuë has before it the relative Pronoun, which is in the Accuſative, and is the abſolute Regimen of *Nous avons reçuë.*

It is declinable after *Etre* imployed ſimply as a *Subſtantive Verb*; and when it is *not* follow'd by an *Abſolute Regimen*; thus we ſay, *Mon frere eſt revenu, ma ſoeur eſt revenuë*, My Brother, *or* Siſter is return'd. *Mes Freres ſont revenus, mes Soeurs ſont revenuës*, My Brethren, *or* Siſters are return'd: But we muſt ſay, *Ma Soeur s'eſt donné un habit*, and not *donnée*. My Siſter has given herſelf a Gown: Becauſe here, *eſt* has the Signification of *avoir*, and *donnée* is follow'd by an Abſolute Regimen, *Un habit*; and the Phraſe may be reduc'd to this Expreſſion, *Ma Soeur a donné un habit à ſoi.* Theſe general Rules allows of ſome Exceptions, which I have taken Nottice of in the *Chap.* of *Orthography*, *Page 25th.*

CHAP. VI. *Of Adverbs.*

AN *Adverb* is a Part of Diſcourſe conſiſting of one or ſeveral Words made uſe of for *expreſſing* ſome Circumſtances of a *Noun* or *Verb*; and which has of itſelf a *complete Senſe*, and without any *Regimen*; as when I ſay, *Dieu agit*, God acts. The Signification of the Verb *Agir* is Simple and without any Circumſtance; but if I ſay, *Dieu agit juſtement*, God acts juſtly: I modify that Signification by a Circum-

Circumſtance expreſs'd in the Word *juſtement*, by the Help of which, I make it underſtood, that God acts rather after one Manner than another; that is, *with Juſtice*.

This Part of Speech is call'd Adverb, becauſe it oftner expreſſeth the Circumſtances of the *Verb* than of the *Noun*, and in Diſcourſe it is almoſt always join'd to the Verb; as in theſe Expreſſions, *Je vous aime tendrement*, I love you tenderly. *Vous m'avez ſervi fidellement*, You have ſerv'd me faithfully.

When I ſay that the Adverb has of itſelf *a complete Senſe*, and without Regimen, *I mean*, that its Signification is *independent* of what may go before, or what may follow after it; thus, *Juſtement* ſignifies with Juſtice, and in whatever Place it is to be met with, this Signification will *not depend* either on the preceding or ſubſequent Words. They are *invariable* by their Nature, and have *none* of the Properties *peculiar* to the *Noun* and *Verb*; thus, they have neither Gender, Number, Caſe, Perſons, Tenſes, or Moods.

There are ſeveral Sorts of Adverbs, which may be reduced to Seven, *viz.* (1.) Adverbs of *Time*. (2.) Of *Place*, or *Situation*. (3.) Of *Order*, or *Rank*. (4.) Of *Quantity* or *Number*. (5.) Of *Affirmation*, *Negation* and *Doubt*. (6.) Of *Compariſon*. (7.) Of *Quality* and *Manner*.

Adverbs of Time, *are such as express some* Circumstances *or* References *of* Time; *the following are for the* Past.

Hier, Yesterday.
Avant hier, Two Days since.
Jadis, Of old.
Autrefois, Formerly.
Anciennement, Antiently.
Dernierement, Lately.
Auparavant, Before.
Depuis peu, } Not long ago.
Nagueres, }

For the present *Time.*

Aujourd'huy, To Day.
Presentement, Presently.
Maintenant, Now.
à Present, At present.
Pour le present, For the present.
à cette Heure, At this Hour.
Tout a l'heure, Immediately.

For the Future.

Demain, To Morrow.
Bientôt, Soon after.
Tantôt, By and by.
Dans peu, Shortly.
Desormais, } Henceforth,
Dorenavant, } Hereafter.
Ci apres, }
Incontinent.
à L'avenir, For the Future.
L'an qui vient, The next Year.
Dans un an d'ici, A Year hence.

For an Indeterminate *Time.*

Souvent, Often.
D'abord, At first, forthwith, &c.
Quelquefois, Sometimes.
Rarement, Seldom.
Soudain, Suddenly.
Jamais, Never.
Toujours, Always.
Depuis, Since.
Une autre fois, Another Time.
Subitement, Out of Hand.
Incessament, Incessantly.
D'ordinaire, Ordinarly.
Tôt, Soon.
Tard, Late.
Alors, lors, Pour alors, Then, or at that Time.
Ensuite, Afterwards, then.
Avant toutes choses, Before all.

Vite,

Vite, Vitement, Promtement, } Quickly.
à la hate, In haſte.
Tout à coup, On a ſudden.
Tout d'un coup, All of a ſudden.
Après tout, After all.
De deux jours l'un, Every other Day.
De deux en deux jours, Every third Day.

Adverbs of Place *or* Situation, *ſerve to mark the* Differences *of* Diſtances *and* Scituations, *with regard to the* Perſon *ſpeaking, or to the* Things *ſpoken of; ſuch as theſe,*

Ici, or *ça,* Here.
Là, There.
Par ici, This way.
Par là, That way.
Où, Where.
D'où, From whence.
Par où, Which way.
Y, En, } There, hence.
Près, Near.
Loin, Far.
Dedans, Within.
Dehors, Without.
Céans, Here, within.
Deſſus, Over.
Deſſous, Under.
En haut, Up.
En bas, Down.
D'ici, From henee.
De là, From thence.
Aupres, Proche, } Near.
De coté, & d'autre, Up and down.
De tous cotéz, On every ſide.
Par tout, Every where.
Nulle part, No where.
Quelque part, Some where.
Ailleurs, Elſe where.
Tout autour, Round about.
à part, A part.
à quartier, Aſide.
à l'ecart, Out of the way.

Adverbs of Order *and* Rank, *expreſs how Things* are order'd *or* rang'd, *without reſpect to* Place; *ſuch are,*

Premierement, En premier lieu, } Firſt, in the firſt Place.
Secondement, En ſecond lieu, } Secondly, in the ſecond Place.
De front, De rang, } A breaſt.
De file, à la file, } In a File.
De ſuite, One after another.
à la ronde, Round about.

Troiſe-

Troiſiemement, } Thirdly, in
En troiſieme lieu, } the third Place.
En ordre, } Orderly, in
Par ordre, } Order.
Enfin, In fine.
à la fin, At laſt.
Tour à tour, By Turns.
Alternativement, Alternally.
Enſemble, Together.
Conjointement, Jointly.
Separément, Seperately.
Devant, Before.
Après, After.

Adverbs of Quantity *or* Number *ſerve to* mark *any* Quantity *or* Number, *or the* Price *or* Value *of* Things; *ſuch are*,

Une fois, Once.
Deux fois, Twice.
Trois fois, Thrice.
Dix fois, Ten times.
Cent fois, A hundred times.
Tant de fois, So many times.
Pluſieurs fois, Several times.
Combien de fois, How many times.
Tant, So much.
Autant, As much.
Fort, } Very, much.
Bien, }
Quaſi, } Almoſt.
Preſque, }
Guere, But little or ſcarce.
à peu près, Very near.
à demi, By halves.
Combien, How much.
Aſſez, Enough.
Trop, Too much, or too many.
Beaucoup, } Much.
Force, } Many.
Quantité, } A great deal.
Plus, } More.
D'avantage, }
Peu, Few, little.
Tant ſoit peu, But a little, never ſo little.
Moins, Leſs.
Pour moins, For leſs.
Au moins, } At leaſt.
Du moins, }
à tout le moins, }
Tout au plus, At the moſt.
Tout à fait, Quite, wholly.
Entierement, Entirely.

Adverbs of Affirmation, Negation, *and* Doubt, *are Words particularly deſign'd to* expreſs *the* Operations *of the* Mind, *when it* affirms, denies, *or* doubts,; *ſuch are for* Affirmation,

Oüi, or *ſi*, Yes, ay.
Ouida, Yes, yes forſooth.
Volontiers, Willingly.
Soit, Be it ſo.

Oui vraiment, Yes indeed.
Certes, Truly.
Certainement, Certainly.
Assurément, Truly.
Veritablement, Indeed.
Sans doute, Without doubt.
Indubitablement, Undoubtedly.
D'accord, Agreed.
Sans faute, *Immanquablement*, } Without fail.
En verité, In truth, indeed.
à la verité, 'Tis true indeed.
à dire vrai, *à ne point mentir*, } To speak the truth.

For Negation.

Non, *ne*, *ni*, *pas*, *non pas*, *point*, *nenni pas*, } No, not.
Point du tout, Not at all.
Nullement, By no means.
En nulle maniere, *En nulle façon*, *Aucunement*, *En aucune façon*, } In no wise. By no means.

For Doubt.

Peut-etre, Perhaps.
Cela se peut, That may be.
Par hazard, By chance.
S'il arivoit, If it should happen.

Adverbs of Comparison, *are those that are* made use of *to* express *the* Comparison *we make of one* Thing *with another, according to its* Quality *or* Quantity; *and as a* Thing *is either* equal *to, or* greater, *or* lesser *than another: There are also* three Sorts *of* Comparison; first, *those of* Equality *are expressed by,*

Comme, As, like.
De même, *Ainsi*, } So, thus.
Egalement, Equally.
Pareillement, In like manner.
Aussi, As.

Comparisons *of* Excess, *are expressed by,*

Plus, *D'avantage*, } More.
De plus, By more.
Pis, Worse.
Mieux, Better.
De mieux, en mieux, Better and better.

Compari-

Comparisons of Defect, are expressed by,

Moins, Less.
Presque, *Quasi*, } Almost.
à peu près, Very near.
Pour le plus, *Tout au plus*, } At most.

Adverbs of Quality *or* Manner, *express in* what manner *Things are done*; *as*,

Bien, Well.
Mall, Ill.
Mediocrement, *Passablement*, } Indifferently.
Vité, *Vitement*, *Promtement*, } Quick, quickly.
à la hate, Hastily.
Confusément, Confusedly.
Pêle mêle, In a Confusion.
Au rebours, The wrong Way.
Sens devant derriere, Preposterously.
Sens dessous dessus, Topsy turvy.
à l'envers, The wrong Side.
à l'etourdie, Heedlessly.
à la volée, At random.
Brusquement, Roughly, bluntly.
Temerairement, Rashly, foolishly.
Precipitamment, Precipitantly.
Par megarde, By oversight.
Peu à peu, By little and little.
Pas à pas, Step by step.
Modestement, Modestly.
Sévérement, Severely.
Innocement, Innocently.
Expres, *à dessein*, *De propos deliberé*, } Purposely, on purpose, designedly, deliberately.
Tout de bon, In good Earnest.
à propos, Seasonably, aptly, in Time.
à point nommé, *Tout à point*, } In the nick of Time, very seasonably.
Commodément, Conveniently.
à peine, Hardly, scarcely.
à regret, *à contre coeur*, *Malgré*, } Against ones Mind, ones Will, or the Grain.
Mal-aisément, With much ado.
Tout beau, *Tout bellement*, *Tout doucement*, } Softly, gently.
à tort, Wrongfully.
à la mode, After the Fashion.
à travers, A cross.

The

The Adverbs of Quality are almoſt as *Numerous* as the *Adjective* Nouns, for there is hardly any Adjective from which an Adverb may not be *form'd*, only by the Addition of the Syllable *ment*; and the Reaſon is, that the *Manners* of *Being*, or *Exiſtence*, being *expreſs'd* by *Adjectives*, and the *Manners* of *doing* by *Adverbs*; there are hardly any Sorts of *being*, which have not a *Relation* to ſome Kind of *acting*; and conſequently, almoſt every *Adjective* has its own *Adverb*; thus, as 'tis ſaid, *Je ſuis modeſte*, I'm modeſt: It is alſo ſaid, *J'agis modeſtement*, I act with Modeſty.

CHAP. VII. *Of Prepoſitions.*

Prepoſitions are Words deſign'd, as well as the *Caſes* of *Nouns*, to *mark* the *different Relations* Things have with one another; and which make no complete Senſe without their *Regimen*; as, when I ſay, Pierre *eſt dans la Maiſon*, *Peter* is in the Houſe: Pierre *eſt avec ſon Maitre*, *Peter* is with his Maſter: I expreſs by the Words *dans* and *avec*, the different Relations of *Peter*, with reſpect to the *Houſe* and his *Maſter*.

They are called Prepoſitions, becauſe they are always *plac'd before* ſome *Noun* which they govern, as, *Dans la maiſon*, *avec ſon maitre*; and their Signification is always *determin'd* by the following *Noun*: Thus, *Dans* and *Avec* would not have any *fixed* or *determined* Signification,

fication, if ſome *Nouns* were not *added*, as, *Dans la maiſon, Avec ſon maitre.*

They are *diſtinguiſh'd* by the Caſes they *govern*; and, as they *govern* three different Caſes, there are three Sorts, *viz.*

(1.) *The* Prepoſitions *that* govern *the* Genitive, *are*,

Loin de, Far from.
Près de, } Near to.
Auprès de, } Near to.
Proche de, } Near to.
Hors de, Out of.
Indepeudamment de, Independant of.
Autour de, Arround, or round about.
à coté de, On the Side of.
à l'egard de, With regard, or reſpect to.
à couvert de, Free, ſecure from.
à l'abri de, Shelter'd from.
à raiſon de, At the rate of.
à la reſerve de, Except, or but.
à l'inſu de, Without the Knowledge.
Au deça de, On this Side.
Au dela de, On that Side.
Au deſſus de, Over, upon, or on.
Au deſous de, Under.
Au devant de, Before.
Au dedans de, In, or within.
Au dehors de, Out, or without.
Au travers de, Croſs, through.
Au peril de, At the hazard.
Au milieu de, In the midſt.
Au lieu de, Inſtead of.
Au prix de, At the Rate, *&*
à cauſe de, Becauſe of.
En depit de, In ſpite of.
En preſence de, In Preſence.
Le long de, Along, all along.
Vis-à-vis de, Over againſt.
à fleur de, Cloſe to, or even with.

(2.) *The* Prepoſitions *that* govern *the* Dative, *are*,

Conformément à, *Juſqu'à*, or *juſques à*, *Quant à*.

(3.) *The* Prepoſitions *that* govern *the* Accuſative *are very numerous; ſuch as*,

à, To, or at.
Après, } After.
D'apres, } After.
Sur, On, or upon.
Sous, Below, or under.
Vers, Towards.

à tra-

à travers, Across.
Dès, So soon, as soon, from.
Avant, Before, in Time.
Avec, With.
Chez, With, or at ones House.
Contre, Against.
Dans, In, or into.
En, In, or to.
Outre, Beside.
Depuis, Since.
Envers, Towards.
Environ, About.
Hors, *Excepté*, *Hormis*, } Out, without, or except.
Non obstant, Notwithstanding.
Malgré, In Spite of.
Pendant, During.
Pour, For, or for to.
Sans, Without.
Selon, According.
Sur, On or upon.
Sous, Below or under.
Vers, Towards.
Veu, Seeing.
Entre, Between.
Par, By.
Parmi, Among.
Durant, During.
Attendu, *Moyennant*, } For, or provided.
Touchant, Touching, concerning.
Devant, Before, in place.
Derriere, Behind.
Suivant, According, pursuant.
Sauf, Without Prejudice.
Joignant, Next.
Dessus, On, or upon.
Dessous, Under.
à travers, Cross, through.
De par, By, *used only in Royal Edicts.*

§. *Observations on the* Adverbs *and* Prepositions.

Some Words may be *look'd upon* sometimes as *Adverbs*, and sometimes as *Prepositions*; as for Example, *Apres*, *loin*, and *depuis* are imploy'd as Adverbs in these Phrases; *Un jeune homme, qui a perdu son tems, s'en repent après*, A young Man, who has misspent his Time, repents it afterwards. *Mon frere demeure loin*, My Brother's House is a good Way off. *Il ne s'est rien fait depuis*, Nothing is done since. But, they are Prepositions in these Expressions,

Le jeu eſt permis après *l'Etude*, Games or Diverſions are allowable after Study. *Votre Maiſon eſt* loin *de la mienne*, Your Houſe is at a good Diſtance from mine. *J'ai toujours été malade* depuis *le mois paſſé*, I have always been ill ſince laſt Month.

In Order to *know* when the *ſame Word* is an *Adverb* or *Prepoſition*, obſerve, That it is always an *Adverb*, when it has *no Regimen*, and a *Prepoſition* when it *has*.

There are Adverbs and Prepoſitions *expreſs'd* by *ſeveral Words*, and theſe Words are frequently *Subſtantive* or *Adjective* Nouns; as *Tout à l'heure, tout à coup, à peu près, à point nommé, au contraire, à bon droit, à l'envie*, &c. are *Adverbs*. *à l'egard de, au lieu de, à la reſerve de, le long de, au devant de*, &c. are Prepoſitions. Now, to know when theſe *combin'd Words* amount to an *Adverb*, or a *Prepoſition*, obſerve their Signification, that is, if they ſignify *ſome Circumſtances* of the Noun, or Verb, with a *complete Senſe*, they are *Adverbs*; and if they expreſs any *Relation* with a *Regimen*, they are *Prepoſitions*; as in this, *Vous parlez à l'aventure*, You ſpeak at random; *à l'avanture* is an Adverb, becauſe it expreſſes a Circumſtance or Manner of ſpeaking. And in *Je parle en depit de vous*, I ſpeak in Spite of you; *en depit* is a Prepoſition, becauſe it expreſſes a Relation between my Action of ſpeaking and you; and it requires neceſſarily a Regimen, which is *de vous*.

There

There are alſo *Adjective Nouns*, which are *ſometimes employed* as Adverbs, and have their Signification, as in theſe Expreſſions, *Cette Fleur ſent bon*, This Flower ſmells well; *Vous voyez clair*, You ſee clearly; *Parlez haut*, Speak aloud: *Bon*, *Clair*, *Haut*, have the Signification of Adverbs, tho' they be Adjective Nouns; and the *Mark*, to know them by, is, when there is neither a Subſtantive *expreſs'd* or *underſtood*, and that they only ſignify a *Circumſtance* or *Modification* of the *Verb*, with which they are joyn'd: In a Word, when they expreſs a *Manner of doing* in a Verb, and not a *Manner of being* in a Subſtantive Noun, they are Adverbs; as when I ſay, *Vous parlez haut, et votre Appartement eſt* haut, You ſpeak aloud, and your Appartment is high. In the firſt, by the Word *Haut*, I expreſs *a Circumſtance* of the Verb *Parler*, or *a Manner* of performing the Action of ſpeaking: In the ſecond, by *Haut*, I expreſs a *Quality* or a *Manner of Being* of the Subſtantive Noun *Appartement*.

In Diſcourſe, *En* and *Y* have not always the ſame Signification; *En* is *a Prepoſition*, when it is follow'd by a Noun which it governs; as, *J'ai fait un Voyage en* France, I made a journey to *France*; there it has very near the ſame Signification with *Dans*.

It is a *Conjunctive Pronoun*, when join'd with a Verb, and put in the Place of a Perſonal Pronoun, or of a Subſtantive Noun in the Genitive

nitive or Ablative; as, when I ſay, *Je vous en ai parlé*, that is, I have ſpoken to you of him, her, it, of them, of this, or that Thing, of this or that Perſon, or of theſe Things, or Perſons.

Sometimes *En* has ſcarce any Signification, when it is *joyn'd with* Conjunctive Pronouns, and *before* certain Verbs; as, *Je m'en vais, nous nous en allons, ſe m'en retourne, nous nous en retournons*, which is the ſame at Bottom; as, *Je vais*, I go, *Nous allons*, We go, *Je retourne*, I return, *Nous retournons*, We return.

Y is an *Adverb* when it expreſſes *ſome Circumſtance* of Place; as, *Vous y allez*, You go there; *Vous y demeurez*, You ſtay there; that is, You go to, or you ſtay in that Place.

Y is a *Conjunctive Pronoun* when it is put in the *Place* of a *Perſonal Pronoun*, or *Subſtantive Noun* in the Dative; as, Pierre *eſt un homme dangereux ne vous y livrez pas*, *Peter* is a dangerous Man, don't truſt him, don't lay your ſelf open to him, that is, to *Peter*.

CHAP. VIII. *Of Conjunctions.*

Conjunctions are Expreſſions conſiſting of *one* or *more* Words, that ſerve to form and mark a Kind of *Junction* or *Coherence* betwixt Words or Sentences: When they are form'd of more than one Word, they conſiſt ordinarily of *Nouns*, *Adverbs*, or other *Conjunctions* follow'd by the Conjunction *Que*; as, *Au lieu que*,

Where-

Whereas. *Tellement que*, So, or then. *Afinque*, To the End that.

There are Fifteen different Sorts of Conjunctions, *viz.* (1.) *Copulatives.* (2.) *Disjunctives.* (3.) *Adversatives*, or of *Opposition.* (4.) Of *Exception*, or *Restriction.* (5.) *Conditional.* (6.) *Suspensive*, or *Dubitative.* (7.) *Concessive.* (8.) *Declarative.* (9.) *Interrogatory.* (10.) *Comparatives* of Equality. (11.) *Augmentatives*, and *Diminitives.* (12.) *Causal.* (13.) *Illatives*, or Conclusive. (14.) Of *Time*, and Order. (15.) Of *Transition.* Of which in Order.

(1.) *Copulative* Conjunctions are those that serve to *assemble two Terms*, or Two Propositions under the same *Affirmation*, or *Negation.* Those for *Affirmation* are *Et, aussi, tant*, and *Que*, when they are imploy'd *simply* to unite two Terms. And *Ni* and *Non plus* are for the Negation. Examples, *La vertu et la Science sont estimables*, Virtue and Knowledge are valuable Things. *Vous le voulez, je le veux bien* aussi, Since you have a Mind, I am satisfied also. *Tous les Cercles de la Sphere* tant *les grands* que *les petits se divisent en* 360 *degrés*, All the Circles of the Sphere, the greater as well as the lesser, are divided into 360 Degrees. *Ni les biens, ni les honneurs ne valent pas la sante*, Neither Riches nor Honours are so valuable as Health. *Puisque vous ne Sortez pas je ne sortirai pas* non plus, Since you stay at Home, I'll do so too.

(2.) The *Disjunctive* denote *Partition* and *Distinction* in the Sense of the Things spoken of; they are *Ou*, *ou bien*, and *Soit*, or *Soit que*: Examples, *C'est le Soleil*, ou *la Terre qui tourne*, Either the Sun or the Earth turns round. *Grand Roi cesse de vaincre*, ou *je cesse d'ecrire*, Great Monarch, supercede your Victories, or I give over describing them. *Si vous voulez faire un voyage utile et agreable allez en* France, ou bien *parcourrez les villes de* Flandre, If you will travel to Advantage and with Pleasure, go to *France*, or rather take a View of the Towns of *Flanders*. *Il faut toujours avoir l'Esprit egal* soit *dans la bonne* soit *dans la mauvaise fortune*, People should always keep their Temper, whether in prosperous or adverse Fortune. Soitque *vous mangiez* soit que *vous beviez*, *faites tout pour la gloire de Dieu*, Whether you eat or drink, do all to the Glory of God.

(3.) *Adversative* Conjunctions are those that serve *to connect* two Propositions by *marking Opposition* in the Second, with respect to the First; They are, *Mais*, *Cependant*, *Neanmoins*, *pourtant*, *toutefois*. Examples, *Les hommes sont vifs et ardens quand il s'agit de leurs Interêts* mais *quand il s'agit de ceux de Dieu ils sont indifferents*, Men are active and zealous about their own Concerns, but when those of Religion come into the Question, they are cold and indifferent. *Quelque Ingenieux que fussent les* Grecs *et les* Romains *ils n'ont* cependant *pas trouvé l'art d'imprimer les Livres*, *ni de graver les Estampes*, However

ever ingenious the *Greeks* and *Romans* were, yet they were ignorant of the Art of printing Books and engraving Copper-plates. Marius *fut fort maltraité de la Fortune* Neanmoins, *il ne perdit point courage*, Fortune treated *Marius* very rudely, yet his Courage supported him. Ciceron *quoique grand Philosophe n'etoit* pourtant *pas ennemi des louanges*, Tho' *Cicero* was a great Philosopher, he was however fond of Applause. *Votre faute merite punition je veux bien* toute fois *vous la pardonner*, I will pardon your Fault, tho' it merits Correction.

(4.) Conjunctions of *Exception*, or Restriction *confine*, in some Measure, the *Generality* of an Idea or Proposition; such as, *Si non, si ce n'est que, quoique, bien que, encore que, hors que, hors de, à moins que à moins de, pour* in the Sense of *quoique*. Examples, *Je n'ai rien à vous dire*, si non *que vous obeissez*, I have nothing to say to you, save that you obey Orders. *Je ne suis pas d'avis que vous entrepreniez cette affaire* si se n'est que, *ou* hors que, *ou à* moins que *vous ne vouliez risquer de vous ruiner*, I'm not for your attempting that Affair, unless you have a Mind to hazard your own Ruin. *Il n'est pas insolent* quoique *riche*, Tho' he be rich, he is not insolent. Pour *etre devot on n'en est pas moins homme*, Devout Persons are however frail.

(5.) The *Conditional* Conjunctions are those that, *connecting* two Numbers of the Discourse, express a *Condition*, on which depends the Effect of what is declar'd in one of these Mem-

bres; they are, *Si, ſi non, quand, quand bien, pourveu que, ſuppoſé que, bien entendu que, à condition que, à la charge que, au cas que, en cas que, à moins que.* Ex. *Vous ſerez ſauvé* ſi, *ou* pourvu que *ou* ſuppoſez que, *ou* au cas que, *ou* en cas que *vous pratiquiez la vertu: Ou* bien entendu que, *ou a* condition que, *ou* à la charge que *vous pratiquerez la vertu*, You will be ſaved, if, or provided, or ſuppoſing, or in Caſe you practiſe Virtue, or on Condition, or provided, that you ſhall practiſe Virtue. *Faites penitence* ſi non *vous eprouverez la juſtice de Dieu*, Repent, or the Juſtice of God will overtake you. Francois I. *n'eût rendu que la pareille à* Charles *Quint.* quand, quand meme, quand bien *il l'eut fait arêter lorſqu'il paſſa par la* France, *Francis* I. would have been but even with *Charles* the Fifth, when, or even when, or altho' he had caus'd arreſt him in his paſſing through *France. Un Corps n'a point de mouvement*, à moins qu'il *ne le reçoive d'un autre*, A Body has no Motion, unleſs it be communicate from another.

(6.) *Suſpenſive* or *Dubitative* Conjunctions denote ſome *ſuſpenſe* or *doubt* in Diſcourſe; ſuch are, *Si, ſavoir ſi, à ſavoir ſi, ceſt à ſavoir ſi*, and *quoi qu'il en ſoit.* Examples, *Un Homme heureux ne ſait jamais* ſi *on l'aime*; Proſperous People never know if they are beloved. *Vous faites de beaux Projets pour l'avenir* ſavoir *ou* à ſavoir, *ou* ceſt à ſavoir ſi *la Mort ne vous empêchera pas de les executer*; You are forming fine Projects for hereafter; that is, or that is to

to ſay, if Death do not hinder your executing them. Quoi qu'il en ſoit *de tout ce que vous venez de dire j'en veux courir les Riſques*; Whatever may be in what you have juſt now ſaid, I am willing to run all Riſques in it.

(7.) *Conceſſive* Conjunctions mark *ones conſent*, or *agreeing* to a Thing; as, *à la verité, à la bonne heure que, quand, quand bien, quand même, non que, non pas que, ce n'eſt pas que, quoi que, encore que, bien que.* Examples, à la verité *la diviſibilité infinie de la Matiere, ne ſe peut pas comprendre par l'Imagination, elle n'eſt cependant pas moins certaine*; The infinite Diviſibility of Matter is indeed incomprehenſible by the Imagination; however, it is not the leſs certain. à la bonne heure *qu'on puiſſe quelque fois s'accommoder au Tems & à la Neceſſité, mais il ne faut jamais le faire aux depens de ſa Conſcience*, In good Time, or in God's Name; tho' one may yield to the Times, or Neceſſity, yet it ſhould always be with a ſafe Conſcience. Quand, quand même, quand bien *cela ſût vrai que s'enſuivroit-il*; When, or even when that were true, where's the Conſequence. Non que, non pas que, ce n'eſt pas que, *vous ne ſoyez bien fondé dans vos Pretenſions, mais il faut quelque fois ceder à la Force & à l'Authorité*; Not but, or I don't deny but, your Pretenſions are well grounded; but, on ſome Occaſions, Force and Authority muſt be yielded to.

(8.) *Declarative* Conjunctions are uſed generally for giving *more Light* in to a Subject, and *explain-*

explaining it more fully; as, *Savoir, à ſavoir, c'eſt à ſavoir, comme, comme par Exemple, c'eſt à dire.* Examples, *La terre eſt diviſée en quatre Parties,* ſavoir, à ſavoir, c'eſt à ſavoir, l'Europe, l'Aſie, l'Afrique, & l'Amerique; The Earth is divided into four Parts, to wit, or that is, *Europe, Aſia, Africa,* and *America. Il y a bien des choſes dans la Nature dont nous connoiſſons les Cauſes* comme, *ou* comme par Example *l'Elevation de l'Eau dans les Pompes;* There are a great many Things in Nature whoſe Cauſes we can account for; ſuch as, or as for Inſtance, the riſing of Water into Pumps. *L'Arithmetique* ceſt à dire *la Science des Nombers;* Arithmetick, that is, the Science of Numbers.

(9.) *Interrogative* Conjunctions ſerve in *asking* of *Queſtions,* ſuch as, *Pourquoi, d'ou vient que,* &c. *Examples,* Pourquoi *l'aimant attire-t-il le fer?* Why does the Load-ſtone attract Iron? D'ou vient que *les Liqueurs bauſſent & baiſſent dans les Barometres & Thormometres?* Why do the Liquors ariſe and fall in the Barometers and Thermometers.

(10.) *Comparative* Conjunctions, or of Equality, ſerve to *mark a Relation,* Conformity, or Parity between two Terms or Propoſitions; as, *Comme, de même, ainſi que, auſſi bien que, auſſi peu que, autant que, non plus que, ni plus ni moins que, ſi que,* Examples, *La Deſtruction de* Jeruſalem *eſt arrivée,* comme, de même que Ainſi que Jeſus Chriſt *l'avoit prédite,* The Deſtruction

ſtruction of *Jeruſalem* happened as, in the ſame Manner, or juſt as, Our Saviour had foretold. *Le ſecond* Brutus *auroit retabli les* Romains *dans leur ancienne Liberté, s'il les eut trouvés* auſſi bien *diſpoſés* qu'*ils l'etoient dans le tems du premier*, The ſecond *Brutus* would have reſtor'd the *Romans* to their ancient Liberties, if he had found them as well diſpoſed as they were in the Days of the firſt *Brutus*. *J'ai étudié cette Science* auſſi peu que *vous*, I have apply'd my ſelf as little to that Science as you. *J'ai* autant *travaillé cet Ouvrage* que *je le pouvois*, I have perform'd this Work with as great Care and Exactneſs as I could. Judas *ne fut* non plus *touché des Reproches de ſon Maître* que *s'ils ne l'euſſent point regardé*, *Judas* was no more affected with his Maſters Reproaches, than if they had not concern'd him. *On l'a traité* ni plus ni moins que *ſi c'eut été un Voleur*, He was treated neither better or worſe than if he had been a Robber. *Le Syſteme de* Ptolomée *n'eſt pas* ſi *probable* que *celui de* Copernic, *Ptolomy's* Syſtem is not ſo ſupportable as that of *Copernicus*. *La Langue* Françoiſe *eſt* ſi *belle* que *la plûpart des Etrangers veulent l'apprendre*, The *French* Language is ſo beautiful that many Foreigners are fond of learning it.

(11.) The *Augmentative*, or *Diminitive* Conjunctions are uſed to *add to*, *reſtrict*, or *diminiſh* any Thing that is advanc'd. The Augmentatives are, *d'ailleurs*, *outre que*, *de plus*, *au ſurplus*, *encore*. The Diminitives are, *au moins*, *du*

du moins, pour le moins, encore. Examples, *La plupart des Riches qui n'ont point de Naiſſance ſont fiers & pleins d'Arrogance, ils ſont d'ailleurs brutaux & inſolens,* Perſons of mean Birth, who have acquired Riches, are commonly proud and full of Arrogance, beſides, they are brutal and inſolent. *Rien n'eſt plus amuſant que l'Hiſtoire,* outre qu'*on y trouve d'excellentes Inſtructions pour ſe conduire Sagement,* Nothing is more amuſing than Hiſtory; moreover, excellent Inſtructions for the conduct of Life are to be found in it. *Je vous dirai* de plus *qu'un jeune Homme ne doit rien faire que ce que lui eſt permis ou ordonné,* I tell you further, a young Man ſhould not do any Thing but what he is allow'd or order'd to do. Ovide *a Veritablement de grands Defauts;* au ſurplus *il eſt plein de penſées vives & Brillantes, Ovid* has in truth great Failings, for the reſt he is full of lively and bright Thoughts. *Ce n'eſt pas aſſez d'Honerer les Saints il faut* encore *les imiter,* It is not enough to pay Honour to the Saints, we ſhould alſo endeavour to imitate them. *L'Avantage qu'un jeune Homme doit remporter du College eſt* au moins *ou* du moins *de bien ſavoir raiſonner,* One Advantage that a young Man ſhould reap from being at the College is, at leaſt, to Reaſon juſtly. Encore *ſi pour Rimer dans ſa verve indiſcrette ma Muſe* au moins *ſoufroit une froide Epithete,* Yet if my Muſe, in her rambling Fits, ſhould, at leaſt, take up with a dull Epithet for the ſake of Ryme.

(12.) The

(12.) The *Cauſal* Conjunctions ſerve to *point the Cauſe* or *Reaſon* why: They are, *Car, parce que, comme, d'autant que, à cauſe que, attendu que, vu que, puiſque, afinque, afin de, pour, pourque, de pour de, de peur que, de crainte de* or *que.* Examples, *Je crois que l'Air eſt peſant* car *j'en ai vu des Experiences ſenſibles,* I believe the Air to be weighty, for I have ſeen convincing Experiments of it. *Evitez l'oiſiveté,* parcequ' *elle eſt la ſource de tous les Vices,* Shun Idleneſs, becauſe it is the Source of all kinds Vice. *Faut-il qu'il ſoit inſolent* à cauſe *qu'il eſt riche,* Becauſe he is rich, muſt he be inſolent. *Il y a lieu de s'etonner que* Salomon *ſoit tombé dans le Crime d'Idolatrie,* vu que *ou* attendu qu'*il etoit le plus ſage, & le plus eclairé de tous les Hommes;* Solomon's falling into the Sin of Idolatry gives ſome cauſe of Wonder, ſince, or ſeeing, that he was the wiſeſt and moſt intelligent of Mankind. *Vous devez continuer l'Etude des Mathematique,* puiſque *vous y trouvez tant de Satisfaction,* You ought to purſue the Study of the Mathematicks, ſince you reap from it ſo great Satisfaction. Comme *vous avez rempli vos Devoirs vous n'avez aucune Reprimande à craindre,* You need not fear any Reproof, ſince you have done your Duty. Pour que, *ou* afin que *le ſejour de la Campagne ſoit plus agreable (il faut avoir quelque connoiſſance de l'Agriculture & du Jardinage,* Some ſmall Knowledge of Agriculture and Gardening is requiſite in order to render a Country Life more pleaſing. *Les* Lacedemonians

demonians *donnoient des Eſclaves yvres en Spectacle, à leurs Enfans* à fin de *ou* pour *leur faire concevoir plus d'Horreur de l'Yvrognerie*, The *Lacedemonians* made their Slaves drunk, and then expos'd them in Publick, in order to inſtil in their Children a greater Abhorrence of Drunkenneſs. Caïn *fut maudit de Dieu* pour *avoir tué ſon frere* Abel, *Cain* was curs'd of God, for having ſlain his Brother *Abel*.

(13.) The *Illative*, or *Concluſive* Conjunctions are us'd, in order to *draw an Inference*, or *Concluſion* from any foregoing Propoſition; they are, *Or, donc, par conſequent, par tant, ainſi, c'eſt pourquoi, cela etant, c'eſt pour cela que, de ſorte que, de façon que, tellement que, de maniere que*. Examples, *Il n'y a point de veritable Bonheur ſans la Vertu* par conſequent, ainſi, *ou c'eſt pourquoi, il n'y a point de perſonne qui ſoit Veritablement heureux*, There can be no true Happineſs without Virtue, conſequently, thus, or therefore, no Sinner can be really happy. *Les Rayons du Soleil Reflechis par les Goutes de Pluie forment l'Arc-en-ciel de ſorte que, ou de façon qu'il ne paroit jamais qu'il ne pleuve*; The Rainbow is form'd by the Rays of the Sun, being reflected by the Drops of Rain; inſomuch, or ſo, that it never appears but when it rains.

(14.) The Conjunctions of *Time* and *Order*, ſerve *to connect* the Diſcourſe, by ſome Circumſtance of Time or Order; ſuch as, *Quand, comme, lorſque, dans le tems que, dans le meme tems que, en meme tems que, pendant que, tandis que,*

que, durant que, avant que, depuis que, dès que aussi-tôt que, à peine, après, cependant, enfin à la fin. Examples, *Nous sentons moins la Chaleur du Soleil* quand *il est plus près de la Terre*, When the Sun is nearer the Earth, we are less sensible of its Heat. Comme, *ou* lorsque, *ou* dans le tems qu' Abraham *etoit prêt de frapper* Son *fils* Isaac, *un Ange lui arrêta la main*; As, *or* when, *or* the Moment that *Abraham* was going to kill his Son *Isaac*, an Angel stopped the Blow. Pendant que, durant que, *ou* tandis que, *les* Romains *mepriserent les Richesses, ils furent sobres & vertueux*; While that, *or* as long as, *or* whilst Riches were despised by the *Romans*, they continued sober and vertuous. *On se servoit d'écorces d'Arbres*, ou *de Peaux pour ecrire* avant que le *Papier fût en Usage*; Before the Invention of Paper, the Film or Bark of Trees, or Skins of Animals were made use of to write upon. *Les Batailles sont bien moins sanglantes* depuis qu' *on se sert de la Poudre à Canon*; The Event of Battles is not so bloody since the Use of Gun-powder. *Dès que, ou* auſſi tôt que *le grand Cham de* Tartarie *a dîné, un Heraut crie que tous les autres Princes de la Terre peuvent aller manger*; The Moment, or as soon as the Cham of *Tartary* has din'd a Herald proclaims, that all the other Princes of the Earth are at freedom to eat. A peine Cæsar *fut-il entré dans le Senat que tous les Conjurés se jetterent sur lui & le percerent de Coups*; Scarce had *Cæsar* entered

the

the Senate when the Conſpirators fell upon him, and gave him mortal Wounds. Après que Salomon *eut bati un Temple à Dieu, il ſe bâtit un Palais pour lui*; After *Solomon* had built a Temple for the Lord, he built a Palace for himſelf. *Nous nous amuſons ici & cependant la nuit vient*; We are trifling away our Time here, and yet, or notwithſtanding, or in the mean Time, Night comes on apace. Enfin, *ou a la fin* Auguſte *triompha de ceux que lui Diſputoient l'Empire*; At laſt, or in the end, *Auguſtus* triumphed over all his Competitors in the Soveraignty.

(15.) The Conjunctions of *Tranſition* are made uſe of in Diſcourſe to *paſs from one* Circumſtance to *another*; they are, *Or, en Effet, au reſte, à propos, après tout.* Examples, *Or toutes choſes ayant eté ainſi reglées*; Now Things being upon this Footing. *En Effet qu'y a-t-il de plus raiſonnable?* Can any Thing indeed be more reaſonable? *Au reſte vous devez en toute Occaſion compter ſur mon Zele*; Now, but, or finally, you may, on all Occaſions, lay your Account on my Zeal for your Intereſts. *à propos de Tableaux j'en ai Aujourdui vû un des plus rares*; Now as to Paintings, or ſince you talk of Pictures, I have ſeen to Day a very curious, or one of the rareſt that is to be ſeen. *Après tout je ne la trouve pas ſi deſagreable*; After all, or every Thing conſider'd, I like her pretty well; or ſhe has ſomething agreeable about her.

§. *Of*

§. *Of the Conjunction,* Que.

This Conjunction is *ſo frequently us'd* in Diſcourſe, that it makes almoſt the only *Connection* of it, and beſides, has Significations ſo *peculiar* and ſo *different* one from another, that I think it *deſerves ſingly* a ſeparate Article; and therefore I ſhall endeavour, in a few Words, and by Examples, to explain the different Uſes and Significations of the Conjunction, *Que*.

Firſt, Its *moſt general Uſe* is to be placed *after* a great Number of Verbs, that expreſs *Actions* or *Operations* of the Mind; and then it ſerves to *explain* and *unfold* the Object of theſe Operations: As when I ſay, *Je crois*, que *l'Ame eſt immortelle*, I believe the Soul to be immortal. *Je doute* que *vous aimiez la vertu, comme vous le devez*, I doubt, if you are ſo much in Love with Virtue, as you ſhould. It is by the Conjunction *Que*, that I explain in theſe two Phraſes, wherein *conſiſt* the *Belief* and *Doubt* of my Mind.

From whence it follows, That the Conjunction *Que* ought always to be *follow'd* by another Verb, *ſometimes* plac'd in ſome Tenſe of the *Indicative*, and *ſometimes* in one or other of the *Subjunctive*.

The *General Rule* that may be eſtabliſhed in this Point, is, that when *Que* follows any Verb of *Affirmation*, or that *denotes* any Kind of *Certainty*, it *governs* or requires the next Verb in the *Indicative*; as, *Je ſai* qu'*il* eſt *en peine*, I know he is in Trouble. *Je conviens* qu'*il m'a payé*, I allow, he has paid me. *Jeſpere* qu'*il* viendra, I expect he will come.

But if *Que* comes after a Verb, that inſinuates *Denial, Doubt, Ignorance, Fear, Deſire*, or in a Word, which expreſſes *nothing* of *Poſitive*, then it governs the following Verb in the *Conjunctive*; as, *Je doute* qu'*il* ſoit *en peine*, I doubt of this Trouble. *Je ne conviens pas* qu'*il m'*ait *payé*, I don't agree that he has paid me. *Je n'eſpere pas* qu'*il* vienne, I deſpair of his coming.

(2.) *Que* is joyn'd to the moſt Part of the other Conjunctions, as has been already ſhown.

(3.) *Que* is always plac'd *before* the third Perſon of the *Imperative*, without being govern'd by any preceeding Verb; as, Que *mon Secretaire vienne*, qu'il *reçoive mes Ordres*, Let my Secretary come, let him receive my Orders.

(4.) It is imployed in the *Beginning* of the Phraſe in *Exclamations* of *Averſion*, of *Wonder*, *Indignation*, *Imprecation*, or *Wiſh*. Que *je trahiſſe mon ami, je mourrois plutôt*, Should I betray my Friend, I'd rather die. Que *l'on n'ait pas eu plus de Reſpect pour un ſi grand Perſonage*, Fy, that they had no more Regard to a Perſon of ſo high Rank. Que *je puiſſe mourir, ſi je vous en impoſe*, May I die, if I mean to impoſe on you in that Affair.

(5.) It is put for *à fin que*, *Approchez* que *je vous parle*, that is, afin que *je vous parle*, Come near, that I may talk with you.

(6.) For *Combien*, Que *vous etes different de ce que vous etiez autrefois*, that is, *Combien vous etes different*, How different are you from what you were formerly.

(7.) For *Autre choſe ſi non, vous ne faites* que *badiner*, that is, *Vous ne faites autre choſe ſi non badiner*, You do Nothing but play the Wag.

(8.) For *Dès que*, *Auſſitôt que*, Qu'*il faſſe le moindre exces il eſt malade*; that is, *Dès que*, ou *Auſſitôt qu'il fait le moindre exces*, &c. The Moment, *or* as ſoon as he commits the leaſt Debauch, he falls ſick.

(9) For *Sans que*, *Il ne ſauroit, ſortir*, qu'*il ne S'enrume*, that is, *Sans qu'il S'enrume*, he can't ſtir Abroad without catching Cold.

(10.) For *Depuis que*, *Il y a huit Jours*, qu'*il eſt parti*, that is, *Il s'eſt paſſé huit Jours depuis qu'il eſt parti*, Eight Days are elapſed ſince his Departure.

(11.) For *Et cependant*, *Mon Ennemi ſeroit-il le plus brave des hommes*, que *je ne le craindrois pas*, that is, *Et cependant*

cependant je ne le craindrois pas, Were my Enemy the braveſt Man in the World, and for all that, I would not be afraid of him.

(12.) For *à moins que, Je ne partirai point* que *tout ne ſoit prêt*, that is, *à moins que tout ne ſoit prêt*, I won't go away, unleſs every Thing be ready.

(13.) In ſtead of *Pourquoi*; Que *n'obëiſſez-vous à vos Maitres*, that is, *Pourquoi n'obëiſſez-vous*, &c. Why don't you obey your Superiors. Que *tardez-vous*, that is, *Pourquoi tardez-vous*, Why do you delay.

(14.) For *Quoi que, encore que*; *Tout habile homme*, qu'*il eſt il n'a pû me repondre*, that is, *Quoique*, ou *encore qu'il ſoit habile homme*, &c. Tho' he be a cleaver Man, he could not anſwer me.

(15.) For *Comme*; *Rempli* qu'*il etoit de ſes prejugés il ne voulut convenir de rien*, that is, *Comme il etoit rempli*, &c. As he was ſtuff'd with his own odd Fancies, he would not come into any Meaſures.

(16.) In Place of *Comme, Lorsque, Parceque, Puisque, Quand, quoique, Si*, &c. When to Propoſitions begining with theſe Words, we joyn others, under the ſame Regimen, by the Help of the Conjunction *Et*; as, *Comme l'armee etoit rangée et* qu'*elle etoit prête a combatre*, that is, *Et comme elle etoit prête à combatre*, As the Army was rang'd in Order of Battle, and ready to attack. *Quand vous aurez reconnu votre faute et* que *vous l'aurez repareée*; That is, *Quand vous l'aurez reparée*, When you ſhall have acknowledg'd your Fault and repair'd it. *Si vous le trouvez et* qu'*il vous demande, où je ſuis*, That is, *Et s'il vous demande*, &c. If you find him, and if he ask you where I am.

(17) *Que* after *ne* is ſometimes put for *Nulle choſe*, and *Quelle choſe*, *Je n'ai* que *faire preſentement*, that is, *Je n'ai nulle choſe à faire*, I have Nothing to do at preſent. *Il n'a* que *voir dans cette affaire*, that is, *Il n'a nulle choſe à voir*, He has nothing to do with that Affair. *Je ne ſais* que *faire*, for *Je ne ſais quelle choſe faire*, I know not what to do.

(18.) *Que* after the Verb *Il ne fait*, follow'd by the Particle *de* and an Infinitive, is put for *tout à l'heure*. *Il ne fait* que *de ſortir*, for *Il eſt ſorti tout à l'heure*, He this Moment gone out.

(19.) *Que de* ſupplies inſtead of *rien de meilleur*; as, *Il n'eſt* que de *prendre le ton haut avec les pretendus importans*, That is, *Il n'eſt rien de meilleur que de prendre*, &c. There is no better Way, than to ſtand on high Terms with thoſe that pretend to great Matters. *Il n'eſt ſauce* que *d'appetit*, Hunger is the beſt Sauce.

(20.) *Que* after *pour*, *trop*, ou *aſſez*, is us'd inſtead of *tellement*, ou *ſi*; *Il eſt aſſez ſage pour* qu'*on ſe repoſe ſur lui*. *Il eſt trop ſage pour* qu'*on ſe defie de lui*, that is, *Il eſt tellement ſage* qu'*on doit repoſer ſur lui*, or *Il eſt ſi ſage qu'on ne doit pas ſe defier de lui*, He is wiſe enough to be truſted, *or* He is too wiſe to be ſuſpected.

(21.) *Que* inſtead of *de qui*, or *à qui*; *C'eſt de vous* que *j'attens cette juſtice*, that is, *C'eſt vous de qui*, &c. 'Tis from you, that I expect this Piece of Juſtice. *C'eſt à vous* que *je la fais*, that is, *C'eſt vous à qui*, &c. 'Tis to you I do it.

(22.) Laſtly, it is put for *Où*, *C'eſt au Ciel* que *Dieu ſe fait voir*, for *C'eſt au Ciel où*, &c. It is in Heaven, that God is to be ſeen.

This Conjunction may yet have ſeveral other Uſes, which the *Senſe of the Phraſe*, wherein it is imployed, will eaſily *diſcover*, when once the Nature of Conjunctions is fully known.

§. *General Obſervations on the* Conjunctions.

(1.) They are, as I have already ſaid, for the moſt Part *compos'd* of *Nouns*, *Adverbs*, *Prepoſitions*; ſometimes even of *Verbs*, or of other *Conjunctions*.

(2.) That

(2.) That the *ſame* Conjunction may have in Diſcourſe *quite different* Uſes; that is, the ſame Word may be *ranged* under *ſeveral Kinds* of Conjunctions; for Example, *Si* is ſometimes a *Conditional*, ſometimes a *Dubitative*, ſometimes a *Comparative* Conjunction; and ſo of ſeveral others.

(3.) That Conjunctions beſides their *connecting* and *aſſembling* all the Members of Diſcourſe, *expreſs* for the moſt part, tho' in an *incompleat* Manner; and with the *Aſſiſtance* of the *Verbs*, the Operations of the Mind, as *doubting*, *affirming*, *denying*, *comparing*, &c. whence it is eaſy to judge of what *Importance* it is to have a true *Conception* of their *Nature*, in order to the perfect Underſtanding of any Language whatever.

And in order to *diſtinguiſh* a Conjunction from any *other* Part of Speech, obſerve, if it conſiſts of *one Word*, ſuch as, *que*, *et*, *donc*, *encore*, &c. you will diſcover eaſily that it is only emplo'd for *connecting* the Diſcourſe, and that it has neither the Signification of *Adverb* or *Prepoſition*. (2.) If it conſiſts of *more* than *one* Word, as, *Tellement que*, *à fin que*, *après que*, *loin de*, *au lieu de*, &c. beſides its proper Signification, it is *ordinarly terminated* by *Que* or *De* follow'd by a Verb, as, *à* fin que *je liſe*, That I may read; Au lieu d'*etudier*, Inſtead of ſtudying.

When the ſame *Expreſſion* may have the *Signification* of ſeveral *different* Conjunctions, in

order to find out the *proper Meaning* of it, in the Sentence where it is imploy'd, the *Definitions* of all the different Kinds of Conjunctions muſt be *carefully ſtudied*, to ſhun *Errors* in this Caſe; and the Senſe of the Phraſe will *diſcover* to which Kind of Conjunction the *doubtful Expreſſion* ſhould be applied. Thus when I read, *Je ne ſais ſi j'irai en Campagne*, I do not know if I ſhall go into the Country. And when I know all the Significations of *Si*, I find, it can be here nothing but a *Dubitative* Conjunction.

All Conjunctions are not followed by *Verbs*, there are ſome who are plac'd *indifferently* before *Nouns* or *Verbs*; ſuch as, *Comme*, *auſſi bien que*, &c. *Je ſuis habillé* comme *mon Frere*, I am dreſs'd like my Brother; *Je ferai* comme *vous Voudrez*, I ſhall do as you have a Mind; *Vous Poſſedez la Muſique* auſſi bien que *la Philoſophie*, You are as much Maſter of Muſick as of Philoſophy; *Je chante* auſſi bien que *vous danſez*, I ſing as well as you dance.

Some Conjunctions *govern* the Verbs in the *Indicative*, ſome in the *Conjunctive*, and ſome in the *Infinitive*.

Thoſe who *reſemble* ſome *Prepoſitions* govern the following Verb in the *Infinitive*; and it is by this, that they are *diſtinguiſhed* from *Prepoſitions*; as, *Pour*, *après juſqu'a*, &c. Examples, *Je travaille* pour *gagner le Ciel*, I labour, or uſe my Endeavours to gain Heaven. *Il faut ſe repoſer* après *avoir Etudié*, It is proper to reſt after long Study. *Il eſt Avare* juſqu'a *ſe refuſer*

le

le Neceſſaire, He is ſuch a Miſer as to deny himſelf the Neceſſaries of Life.

Thoſe who terminate in *De* govern all of them, the Verb in the *Infinitive*; as, *à fin de*, *de peur de*, *avant que de*. Examples, *Si je m'applique tant à l'Etude ceſt* à fin de *vous ſurpaſſer*, If I give ſo great Application to my Studies, it is to get the better of you. *Evitez le jeu* de peur d'*en faire une Paſſion*, Shun gaming leaſt you turn too fond of it. *Il faut prier Dieu* avant que de *ſe mettre a l'Etude*, God's Aſſiſtance ſhould be prayed for before we ſit down to ſtudy.

Amongſt thoſe that terminate in *Que*, ſome *govern* the Verb in the *Indicative*; ſuch as, *Parce que*, *lors que*, *à condition que*, *puis que*, and ſeveral others, which Practice will diſcover. As for Example, *Je ne vous donne des avis que*, parce que *je vous aime*, I do not adviſe you, but becauſe I love you. *Nous etions à Table* lors que *vous vintes*, We were at Dinner, or Supper, when you came. *Je vous prête dix Piſtoles*, à condition que *vous me les rendrez dans huit jours*, I lend you ten Piſtoles, on Condition you reſtore them in eight Days. *Vous aurez une recompenſe* puis que *vous l'avez merité*, You ſhall be rewarded, ſince your Merit claims it.

There are others that *govern* the Verb in the *Subjunctive* Mood; as, *à fin que*, *avant que*, *à moins que*, *quoi que*, &c. Examples, *Je vous avois invité à Diner*, à fin que *vous puſſiez vous*

j'accommoder avec mon Frere, I invited you to Dinner, in the View of making up Matters with my Brother. *Il eſt venu* avant que *j'euſſe achevé mon Ovrage*, He came before I had compleated my Work. *Je ne puis juger d'un Livre* à moins *que je ne l'aie lû*, I cannot form a Judgment of a Book, unleſs I have read it. Quoique *je vous diſe tous les jours de travailler vous n'en faites rien*, Tho' I tell you every Day to be buſy, yet you trifle away your Time.

Tho', perhaps, I have *omitted* to ennumerate *exactly* all the *Conjunctions*, yet thoſe I have not mentioned may be *diſtinguiſhed* in Diſcourſe, and *reduced* to one or other of the Kinds before ſet down.

CHAP. IX. *Of Interjections.*

Interjections are Words uſed to *expreſs* ſome *Motions* of the *Soul*, as *Joy*, *Grief*, *Fear*, *Averſion*, or *Encouragement*.

To expreſs *Joy*, we ſay, *Ah! bon, ha! quelle joie!*

To expreſs *Grief*, *Ah! helas! mon Dieu! he! Eh! Seigneur! o Ciel!*

To expreſs *Fear*, *Ah! helas! hé!*

To expreſs *Averſion*, *Fi! Pouah! ſi le Vilain! faim de vous! au Diantre! Bagatelles, des Sotiſes!*

To *Encourage*, *ça, allons, courage ſus, or ſus, ſus donc, marche.*

By way of *Wonder*, *Oh! ah cuida! voyez!*

To

To *call* a Perſon, *Hola! He! Hola ho, Parlez hei.*

To *give over*, *Hola.*

To *Reprove*, *Tout beau*, *tout doucement*, *ſoin de vous Arretez*, *prenez Garde.*

To *impoſe Silence*, *Paix*, *Chut*, *ſt*, *Silence.*

The ſame *Interjections expreſs* different *Motions* of the *Soul*, and are only to be *diſtinguiſhed* by the different *Tones* and *Accents* they are pronounced in.

§. *Of the* Uſe *of ſeveral* Particles, *which being* very differently *imploy'd occaſion the greateſt* Difficulty, *the Knowledge of which is* abſolutely *neceſſary in the* French *Language.*

Of *De*, *Du*, *Des.*

(1.) Theſe *Particles*, beſides their Uſe as *Articles* of the *Genitive*, or *Ablative*, often ſignify *durant* before Nouns of *Time*; as, *Il n'a point paru* de *tout le Jour*, *ou* du *Regne de* Louis *Quatorze*, He did not appear during the whole Day, or during the Reign of *Lewis* XIV. *Il a travaillé* des *Heures entieres*, He has wrought whole Hours, or during ſeveral Hours. *Je ne le verrai* de *ma Vie*, I ſhall not ſee him in my Lifetime.

(2.) Sometimes they ſignify *Avec*; as, *Travailler* de *ſa main*, de *ſa tête*, To labour with ones Hands, or with ones Brain.

(3.) Sometimes they ſignify *Par*; as, *Il eſt mort* de *Faim*, He died of, or by, Hunger. *Il s'y prit* de *cette Maniere*, He ſet about it in, or by, this Manner or Method.

(4.) The Particle *De*, but neither *Du* nor *Des* is imploy'd in the following Caſes: (1.) *After* certain *Adjectives*

ctives joyn'd to the Impersonal Verb *il est*, followed by an Infinitive; as, *Il est aisé* de *reprendre, et mal aisé* de *mieux faire*, It is an easy Thing to blame, and not so easy a Matter to mend. (2.) *Before Adjectives* taken *substantively* preceded and govern'd by a Verb; as, *Qu' avez-vous vû* de *Beau?* What fine Things have you seen? *Il n'y en eût point* de *tués?* There were none of them kill'd. When the Adjective is a *Participle Passive* preceded by a Noun of Number *de* may be *suppress'd*; as, *Il y'en eut vingt tués*, There were twenty of them kill'd; but, *de tués* is more elegant. (3.) After *Il n'y a rien* follow'd by an Adjective; as, *Il n'y a rien* de *si vrai que l'Evangile*, Nothing is so true as the Gospel. *Il n'y a rien* de *si grand que Dieu*, Nothing is so great as the Almighty. (4.) In these and the like Expressions, *Il vient* de *sortir*, He is just gone out. *Il ne fait que* de *commencer*, He begun this Moment. *De* has the Signification of *tout-a l'heure*.

Of the Particles, *à, au, à la, aux.*

They are *Articles* of the *Dative*, and besides are equally *imployed* to other *Uses*, except *à*, which has some peculiar, which we shall remark. (1.) They *design* the Person to whom any Thing *pertains* or agrees; as, *Ce Livre est* à *moi*, That Book is mine. *C'est* à *vous d'y pourvoir*, 'Tis your Business to look to that. They mark the *Place* of ones *abode*; as, *Vivre* à Paris, à la *Campagne* au Perou, *aux Indes*, To live at *Paris*, *Perou*, in the Indies. Or the *Situation* one is in; as, *Etre* aux *Abois*, à la *Mort*, to be at ones last Shift, or at the last Gasp.

They sometimes signify *avec*, as, *Peindre* à *l'Huile*, To paint with Oyl. *Travailler* au *Fuseau*, To work with the Spindle. *Toucher* au *Doigt*, To touch with the Finger.

Sometimes the *Things* that People are *employ'd about*; as, *Travailler* à *de la Dentelle*, To work Lace. *S'appli-*

qur

quer aux *Mathematiques*, To apply ones ſelf to the Mathematicks: Or the Things they have a Diſpoſition for, as, *Habile* à la *Guerre*, Experienc'd in the Art of War. *Adroit* au *jeu*, Cleaver at Game.

When they are between two Nouns, they frequently deſign the *Uſe* or *Quality* of the *Perſon* or *Thing* expreſſed by the firſt of theſe Nouns; as, *Un Pot* à *l'eau*, A Water Pot. *Le Cofre* aux *Ecus*, The Caſh Cheſt. *Preſident* au *Mortier*, Preſident with the Cap. *Conſeiller* au *Parlement*, Counſellour in Parliament.

They are imploy'd inſtead of *Par*; as, *Faites le juger* à *des Connoiſſeurs*, Let it be judged by Perſons of Skill. *Je l'ai veu pratiquer* aux *Maitres de l'Art*, I have ſeen it practiſed by Maſters of the Art. Sometimes inſtead of *Selon*, as, à *mon Avis*, In my Opinion.

Sometimes inſtead of *Pour*; as, à *votre Avantage* à *mon Profit*, *il ſe prepare* à *Partir*, For your Advantage, for my Profit, he is preparing for his Departure. *Maitre* à *danſer*, *Fruit* à *garder*, Maſter for dancing, Fruit for keeping.

Sometimes for the Prepoſitions *Dans* or *En*, that were to be follow'd by the Definite Article; *Etre* au *lit*, To be in Bed. *Etre* à la *Maiſon*, To be in the Houſe. Aux *Cas marqués*, in the Cates mention'd.

After an Adjective *à* is placed before a Subſtantive, and thus reckon'd in the Dative; as, *Il eſt beau* à *vous d'en uſer ſi genereuſement*, It is handſome in you to deal ſo generouſly. It is alſo plac'd before an Infinitive, as, *Une choſe belle* à *Voir*, A Thing beautiful to be ſeen. *Difficile* à *comprendre*, Hard to be underſtood. After *C'eſt* à *vous*, *de* or *à* are uſed before an Infinitive; as, *C'eſt* à *vous* à *prendre parti*, It is yours to determine. *C'eſt à moi*, *à* or *de*, *vous ſatisfaire*, It is my Part to ſatisfy you.

A is put for *dequoi*; as, *Donnez lui* à *manger*, Give him ſomething to eat. And for *Si*; as, à *juger de lui par la mine*, If we judge by his Looks. And for *Après*, as, *Feuille* à *Feuille*, Leaf after Leaf.

It

It marks the Space between two Numbers; as, *Il y a quatre à cinq Lieues*, It is between four and five Leagues. And ſometimes the Time or Order Things are done in; as, à *Six Heurs*, At Six a Clock; à *Tems*, In Time; à *ſon Rang*, In his Rank.

Of the Particles *En*, *Dans*, &c.

En and *Dans* mark the State a Perſon is in; as, *Etre* dans *la Joie*, dans *l'Affliction*, To be in Joy, or Affliction. *Etre* en *affaire*, en *Humeur*, To be imploy'd, or in Humour.

En is put for *de même que*; as, *Agir* en *Homme d'Honeur*, To act like a Man of Honour. And for *Par* or *Avec*; as, *Agir* en *Haine*, *de quelqu'un*, To act by, or out of Hatred to any Body. *Soufrir* en *Patience*, To ſuffer with Patience. They alſo ſignify *Selon*; as, En *Rigueur* dans *la Rigueur*, According to Rigour.

En is ſometimes a redundant Particle, which has no particular Senſe, yet Practice places it before certain Verbs, and ſometimes has ſcarce any Signification, as I have already obſerved. At other Times it has, and very different; as, *J'en tiens*, I am caught. *Je n'en puis plus*, I am quite ſpent. *Je m'en prens à vous*, I accuſe, blame, or ſuſpect you. *J'en ſuis là*, That is my Caſe. *Vous en voulez à cette Dame*, You have a Grudge againſt that Lady. *Je ne ſais où j'en ſuis*, I am quite diſconcerted. *Il en eſt des Heros comme des autres Hommes*, It is with Heroes as with other Men. *C'en eſt Fait*, It is paſt Recovery. *C'en eſt fait de moi*, I am undone. *Il en tient le bon Homme*, The poor Man is gulled. *Je m'en tiens à cela*, I ſtand to that. *Il a bu plus que de Raiſon il en tient*, He has taken his Load, he is fuddled

Laſtly, *En* joyn'd with *tantque*; as, En *tantque Jeſus Chriſt etoit Homme il etoit Mortel*, has this Senſe, Jeſus Chriſt by the Quality of Man, or in regard of his Manhood was Mortal.

Beſides

Beſides what I have already obſerv'd concerning *Y*, it makes a conſiderable Part of the Impersonal Verb *Il y a*; and of another, *Il y va*, which governs the Genitive; as, Il y va *de ma Vie*, Il y va *de ma Reputation*, My Life, my Reputation, is at Stake. We alſo ſay, *J'y ſuis*, meaning, I am in the Diſpoſition wherein I ſhould be, with regard to the Matter in Queſtion. *Vous y etes*, You are in the right.

The different Uſes of the Verb Faire.

The general Signification of this Verb, is to *produce*, *conſtitute*, or *cauſe*; as, Faire *une Action*, To do a Deed. Faire *un Crime*, To commit a Crime. Faire *aimer la Vertu*, To make one in love with Virtue. *Se* faire *Eſtimer*, To gain Eſteem. Faire faire *un Ouvrage*, To order a Piece of Work to be made.

Beſides theſe, it has the Following.

Faire *des Soldats*,	To raiſe Soldiers.
— *un Enfant à une femme*,	To get a Woman with Child.
— *un Enfant*,	To be brought to Bed.
— *Semblant*,	To pretend.
— *le bel Eſprit*,	To ſet up for a Wit.
— *un Conte*,	To tell a Story.
— *Carte*,	To deal at Cards.
— *le lit, la chambre*,	To make the bed, dreſs up the Room.
— *Binet*,	To make Uſe of a Save-all.
— *un pet*,	To let a F—t.
— *la barbe à quelqu'un*	To ſhave one.
— *les Cheveux*,	To cut the Hair.
— *un grand Negoce*,	To drive a great Trade.
— *bien de bile*,	To void much bile.
— *la Medecine*,	To practiſe Phyſick.
— *de l'eau*,	To piſs, or to take in freſh Water.

Faire

Faire *du Sable,*	To piſs Gravel.
—— *les doux yeux à quelqu'un,*	To look ſweetly upon one.
—— *le grand,*	To carry it high.
—— *le fin,*	To carry it cunningly.
—— *la ſourde oreille,*	To be deaf of one Ear.
—— *la Cuiſine,*	To cook, or dreſs Meat.
—— *la petite bouche,*	To mince it.
—— *gloire de quelque choſe,*	To take Pride in a Thing.
—— *jouer, voler, ſauter,*	To blow up.
—— *du bois -- aiguade,*	To take in Proviſion of Wood, or Water.
—— *Voile,*	To ſet Sail.
—— *Voile ſur un vaiſſeau,*	To bear up to a Ship.
—— *Pavillon blanc,*	To put out a white Flag.
—— *le nord, ou le ſud,*	To ſtand to the North, or South.
—— *une bonne Menſon,*	To ſet up ones Family.
—— *main baſſe,*	To put to the Sword.
—— *ſes choux gras d'une choſe.*	To get by a Thing.
—— *foi,*	To prove a Thing.
—— *un Ecart,*	To ramble.
—— *part,*	To ſhare.
—— *la vie,*	To make a Livelyhood.
—— *le Cours,*	To cruiſe.
—— *le procès à quelqu'un,*	To arraign one.
—— *la Sentinelle,*	To ſtand Centry.
—— *la garde,*	To be upon the Guard.
—— *la reveuë,*	To take a Review.
—— *banqueroute,*	To break.
—— *la depenſe,*	To be the Steward of a Family.
—— *la ronde,*	To walk the Rounds.
—— *prêter ſerment à quelqu'un,*	To tender the Oath to one.
—— *tant en ſorte que,*	To labour, to endeavour.
—— *bon, ou mauvais viſage,*	To receive kindly, or unkindly.

Combien

Combien faites-vous ce Drap, How much do you ask for this Cloth.

Je n'en veux pas faire *pour ſi peu,* I won't ſell ſo little on't.

Je ne ſaurois qu'y faire, I can't help it.

Cela fait *toutes mes Delices,* That is all my Delight.

Cela fait *un fort bel Effet,* That looks very well.

On le faiſoit *mort,* They gave out, that he was dead.

Cela lui a fait *des Envieux,* That has brought Envy upon him.

Une femme qui a fait *de grandes paſſions,* A Woman that has rais'd great Paſſions.

Il tache à vous faire *quelque Argent,* He endeavours to get ſome Money for you.

C'eſt à faire *à moi d'y aller,* 'Tis my Buſineſs to go thither.

C'eſt à faire *à un poltron de fuir,* 'Tis for Cowards to run away.

C'eſt bien à vous à faire, Does it become you.

Cela n'y fait *rien,* 'Tis no Matter.

Je n'ai que faire *de cela,* I have no need of that.

J'en ai à faire, I want it.

Qu'en avez-vous à faire, What is that to you.

Il a fait *à moi, ou avec moi,* I have done with him.

Je vais où tu n'as que faire, I go where thou haſt no buſineſs.

Il eſt à tout faire, He's for any Thing.

Cet Habit vous fait *fort bien,* That Suit fits you very well.

Vous avez beau faire, Do what you can.

Il ne fait *que d'entrer, de ſortir,* He is but juſt come in, gone out.

Se faire *des Amis,* To get Friends.

— Aux Affaires, To form ones ſelf to Buſineſs.

— à la Fatigue, To inure ones ſelf to Fatigue.

Se Faire *à la Patience,*	To learn Patience.
— *des Affaires,*	To bring ones ſelf into Trouble.
— faire *les Cheveux,*	To get ones Hair cut.
— *la barbe, les Ongles,*	To ſhave ones ſelf, to pair ones Nails.
— *fort d'une choſe,*	To take a Thing upon ones ſelf.
S'en faire *accroire,*	To be conceited.
Je m'en ſuis fait *pour vingt Ecus,*	It coſt me twenty Crowns.
Il fait *Beau, chaud, froid,*	It is fine, hot, or cold Weather.
Il fait *clair de Lune,*	The Moon ſhines.
Il ſe fait *tard, il ſe* fait *Nuit,*	It grows late, or towards Night.
Il fait *dangereux ſe jouer à ſon Maître,*	It is dangerous to ſport with ones Betters.
Il y fait *cher vivre,*	It is dear living there.
C'eſt fait, ou *C'en eſt* fait *de moi,*	I am undone.
Il ſe peut faire,	It is poſſible.

Several other Verbs have very different Significations, which would be too tedious to inſert here, and therefore muſt be remitted to Practice.

PART IV. *The Syntax.*

THE *Manner of Conſtructing one Word with another, with Regard to its different Terminations, according to the Rules of Grammar, is call'd* SYNTAX.

Two or more *Phraſes* joyn'd together, ſo as the one *depend* on the other, in order to *form* a complete Senſe, are called a *Period*; as if I ſay, *La vertu merite d'etre eſtimée; nous l'eſtimons juſques dans nos ennemis*; theſe are ſimply two Phraſes, which don't form a Period: But if I ſay, *La vertu merite tellement d'etre eſtimée que nous l'eſtimons juſques dans nos ennemis*; this is a *Period*, becauſe of theſe two Phraſes one ſuppoſes the other, and depends on it, in order to form a complete Senſe.

Each particular Phraſe, that ſerves to form a Period, is call'd a *Member of it*.

The Manner of expreſſing a *Series of Words, Phraſes*, and *Periods*, according to the *Genius* of a Language, is called *Stile*, which is often confounded with the *Syntax*, by want of due Reflection on the *Nature* of either.

The *Syntax* regards *particularly* the *Conſtruction* and natural *Agreement* of each Word with another, in order to make them agree in *Gender*, *Number*, *Caſe*, *Perſon* and *Mood*.

Whereas Stile, in ſo far as it is *diſtinguiſhed* from Syntax, is *the Manner, wherein the Words conſtructed according to the Laws of Syntax, are rang'd and diſpos'd ſuitable to the Genius of the Language.*

By this Definition it appears, (1.) That *Stile* ſuppoſes and includes the *Syntax*; for if there were no Conſtruction of Syntax, what Stile could there be? (2.) That Syntax is not of ſo *great Extent*, as *Stile*; for in a Diſcourſe the Syntax may be *juſt*, and yet the Stile moſt *wretched*; were it not but in theſe Examples: *Dieu recompenſe toujours avec une extreme fidelité, et une liberalité encore plus grande les juſtes.* — *Il n'eſt Perſonne qui plus que moi, vous honore.* — *Ils firent les uns et les autres ſi bien qu'on leur ajouta foi.* In ſtead of, *Dieu recompenſe toujours les juſtes, avec une extreme fidelité.* —— *Il n'eſt Perſone qui vous honore, plus que moi.* —— *Ils firent ſi bien, les uns et les autres que*, &c.

The Regimens and Terminations of each Word in theſe Phraſes are entirely conform to the Rules of Syntax, and therefore no Fault in it: Yet ſomething is wanting in the Diſpoſition and ranging of theſe ſame Words, in order to ſpeak in the Genius of the Language, and thus there is a Defect of Stile.

And now, ſince we have treated of all the Parts of Speech in Particular, according to their different Kinds; let us next treat of them,

as

as they may be joyn'd together in the Series of Diſcourſe, by the Means of *Syntax* and *Stile*. And firſt,

Of the Concords in General.

(1.) The Adjective muſt agree with the Subſtantive in Gender, Number, and Caſe.

Un beau Garçon. Une belle Fille Un joli Homme. Une jolie Femme. Un bel Edifice. Une belle Maiſon. Bon jour. Bonne Nuit. Beaux Jardins. Belles Fleurs. Tous les Hommes, Toutes les Dames, Chambres Garnies.

(2.) The Adjective that refers to ſeveral Subſtantives Singular, muſt be put in the Plural.

Pierre et Jean ſont Diligens, Ma tante, et ma ſoeur, ſont ſorties, l'Eſprit et le Corps, ſont Eſſentiels à l'Homme.

(3.) The Adjective which refers to many ſingular Nominatives of a Verb, of different Genders, muſt agree with the Subſtantive of the nobler Gender.

Son Pere et ſa Mere ſont Morts. Le Vice et la Volupté ſont oppoſés, à la Vertu et à l'Honeteté.

(4.) A Verb muſt agree with its Nominative in Number and Perſon.

Le Maitre commande. Les Serviteurs obeïſſent. Ceux qui prechent la Vertu, doivent la pratiquer eux-memes. Je parle. Nous parlons. Ils parlent.

(5.) A Verb, that has ſeveral Nominatives Singular, joyn'd by the Conjunction *Et*, muſt be put in the Plural.

Le Prince et la Princeſſe vont ce ſoir à la Comedie. La Valeur, la Prudence, l'Activité, et la Fermeté, dans un Genaral, lui attirent la confiance des Soldats.

(6.) If there be two Nominatives of different Perſons, the Verb muſt agree with the Noun of the nobler Perſon.

Nous lui Parlerons, vous et moi. Vous riſquez beaucoup, vous et votre Pere. Nous ne ſommes Contents ni lui ni moi.

(7.) The Relatives *Qui* and *Que* being of all Genders, Numbers, and Perſons, contain no Difficulty in their Concord with the Antecedent.

Dieu qui eſt infiniment Juſte. La Mere qui aime ſes Enfans. Ceux qui font leur devoir. L'Homme que je reſpecte. La Perſone que j'aime. Les Superieurs que j'eſtime. Les Affaires que j'ai ſur le bras. Moi qui vous parle. C'eſt vous qui parlez.

(8.) A Noun or Pronoun muſt be put in the Caſe which the Verb governs, whereof ſome govern the Genitive, ſome the Dative, and others the Accuſative.

Approchez vous de Moi. Il jouit d'un grand Revenu. Donnez moi. Il aſpire à cette dignité. J'aime la Vertu, et je deteſte le Vice.

CHAP. I. *Of the Uſe of the Articles.*

(1.) THE Article is be uſed with the Nominative before, 1. Common Names. 2. Names of Kingdoms, Provinces, great Places, and Rivers. 3. Before Names of Virtues, Vices, Herbs,

Herbs, and Metals. 4. Before abſolute Pronouns; and, 5. Proper Names, when an Adjective goes before.

1. *Le Cheval, la Cavale.* 2. *Le Dannemarc, la France, l'Ecoſſe, le Gatinois, la Picardie, les Pays Bas, la Tamiſe, le Rein.* 3. *La Patience, l'Orgueil, le Tym, l'Hyſop, le Plomb, l'Argent.* 4. *Le Mien, la Mienne.* 5. *Le grand Alexandre, l'Eloquent Ciceron, le Sage Salomon.*

(2.) When a Subſtantive and Adjective are joyn'd together they have but one Article, which is plac'd before the former of either; Except, 1. When the Subſtantive follows immediately the Adjective *Tout*. 2. When an Adjective, not being a Noun of Number, follows directly its Subſtantive, and when it expreſſes the Sirname or Condition of the Perſon ſpoken of; And, 3. When a reſpective Superlative follows immediately its Subſtantive, two Articles are uſed.

Le Prince vertueux, le vertueux Prince. 1. *De tout le Monde, de toute la Province, à tous les Juges.* 2. *De Charles le Sage, à mon frere le Medecin, à Madame la Ducheſſe.* 3. *Aux Loix les plus Severes, aux Magiſtrats les plus eclairés.*

(3.) When two Adjectives joyn'd together by a Conjunction have the ſame Subſtantive, and almoſt the ſame Signification, the Article is placed only before the firſt; but if they have a quite different Senſe, it is better to repeat the Article.

Le brave et vaillant Wallace. Le prudent, et le fidele Ami.

(4.) The Article is plac'd before Adjectives when, being neither preceded, nor follow'd by any Substantive, they are imploy'd as such.

Le Juste pâtit souvent pour le Coupable. Le Vrai et le Faux ont quelquefois les mêmes aparences.

(5.) The Article is plac'd before all Nouns taken in a determinate Sense.

Le Savoir l'importe sur le Bonheur.

(6.) *Du, de la, de l'* and *des*, are used when we express, Of the, from the, by the, with the, and some.

Du Monde, de la Terre, de l'Ange, de l'Eau, il est revenu du Palais, de la Campagne, des Indes.

(7.) *De*, 1. before Proper Names, and 2. even before Common Names, if an Adjective, or a Pronoun go before. 3. After Adverbs of Quantity. 4. After Verbs implying Need, Want, or Plenty. Or, 5. When we say in *English* of, from, with or by. But, 6. When *Bien* signifies much, or many, it takes *du, de la, de l', des.*

1. *De Jaques, de Marie.* 2. *C'est une Marque de bon Cheval. Une preuve de bon Vin. Je parle de vôtre Pere, de mon Ami.* 3. *Il a assez de Memoire. Beaucoup d'Argent.* 4. *Manquer d'Argent. Il nous combla de biens.* 5. *Le Prince de Condé. Il est revenu d'Angleterre. De Jour De Naissance. De sa propre Main. De tout mon Coeur.* 6. *Aprez bien du raisonnement. Vous vous donnez bien de la peine.*

(8.) *Au, à la, à l', aux*, are plac'd before Common Names, or when we say in *English*, To the.

Allons

Allons au Parc. Il eſt allé à la Campagne. à l'Honeur de votre Connoiſſance. Allé aux Indes, à l'Homme, à la Femme, aux Hommes.

(9.) *A*, before Proper Names, and alſo 2. before Common Names, when a Pronoun goes before it.

A Jaques, à Jean, à Marie; 2. à tous nos Amis, à tous vos Enfans. Aller à ma Maiſon.

(10.) There is a Mixt or Partitive Article, made uſe of, when we ſpeak only of a Part of a Thing; and yet that Part retains the Name of the whole Species: In ſhort, it ſerves for reſtricting the Extent of the Signification of Nouns, and carries with it the Idea of the Pronoun *Quelque* ſome, its firſt Caſe is *Du, de la, de l', des, de.* 2. Its Second, or Genitive *de.* 3. Its Third, or Dative *à du, à de la, à de l', à des, à de.*

Du pain me ſuffit. De l'eau me feroit p'aiſir. Il me faut de la lumiere. Des gens ſavans penſent comme moi. De modeſtes ignorans ſont plus ſupportables, que des ſavans orgueilleux. 2. Homme d'Eſprit. De bien. D'honneur. 3. Cette bierre reſemble à du vin. Il en veut à de la viande. Ce metal reſemble à de l'Or. Il à communiqué ſa Maladie à des Medicins. J'ai eu le Malheur d'avoir affaire à de faux ſavans.

CHAP. II. *Of the Uſe of Nouns.*

(1.) TWO Subſtantives meeting together without a Conjunction, the latter muſt be put in the Genitive.

Le jour du Seigneur. La Maiſon de mon Pere. Le livre de Pierre. Une Couronne de Laurier. Un Cueilliere d'Argent. Une pomme d'Or.

(2.) When certain Collective Nouns are followed by a Genitive; ſuch as, *Amas, Foule, Nombre, Troupe, La plus Part, La Moieté, Partie*; the Adjective agrees with the Noun of the Genitive Caſe. *Quelque choſe*, tho' Feminine, is conſtru'd with an Adjective Maſculine.

Un Amas de pierres taillées. Une foule de jeunes Nymphes. Un grand nombre de Soldats y furent tués. Une troupe de gens etourdis. Une partie du Palais brulé. Je vous donnerai quelque choſe de bon.

N. B. Yet, perhaps, it would be no Fault to ſay, *Une partie de Soldats s'enfuit*, inſtead of *s'enfuirent*. And both the Adjective, and the Verb, ſeem to agree better with *le Tiers*, and *trois Quarts*, than with the Nouns of the Genitive in theſe Inſtances, *Le tiers des Vignes eſt gelé*, rather than *ſont gelées*. *Les trois quarts du Chateau furent brulez*, rather than *fut brulé*.

(3.) *An* and *Année* ſignifying a Year, are thus uſed; *An* after Adjectives of Number, and in theſe Expreſſions, *Tous les Ans. Le nouvel An. Le jour de l'an. L'an de Jeſus Chriſt.* 2. *Année* is uſed after Adjectives of Quality and Order.

Il a vingt-cinq Ans. Elle n'a que dix-ſept Ans. Il y a trente Ans. 2. Je vous ſouhaite une bonne et heureuſe Année. Il a paſſé une mechante Année. Dans la premiere Année de ſon Regne.

Some

(4.) Some Adjectives are indeclinable, ſuch as, *Feu*, *Court*, *Fort*, and *Demi* before a Subſtantive, but when it is placed after one, it is declinable, and muſt have *Et* before it. * Some decline *Feu*, but the Practice is not yet eſtabliſhed.

*Le feu Roy. La feu Reine. Ils ſont demeurez Court. Elle s'eſt fait fort. Une demi-meſure. Une Meſure et demie. * La feue Reine.*

(5.) Theſe Adjectives *Avide*, *Amateur*, *Ami*, *Content*, *Deſireux*, *Digne*, *Indigne*, *Eſclave*, *Envieux*, *Exempt*, *Eloigné*, *Plein*, *Proche*, *Privé*, *Capable*, *Incapable*, &c.

Govern the Genitive.

Avide de Louange. Amateur de ſottiſes. Ami de la vertu. Ennemi du vice. Content de ſa deſtinée. Deſireux du gain. Digne d'un meilleur ſort. Indigne de ma tendreſſe. Eſclave de ſes paſſions. Envieux de mon bonheur. Exemt de tout ſouci. Eloigné du danger. Plein de Bonté. Proche de la ville. Privé de tout appui. Capable d'un ſecret. Incapable d'aucune baſſeſſe.

(6.) Theſe Adjectives, *Agreable*, *Deſagreable*, *Importun*, *Incommode*, *Inſupportable*, *Avantageux*, *Propre*, *Enclin*, *Utile*, *Inutile*, *Favorable Propice*, *Prêt*, *Semblable*, *Comparable*, &c.

Govern the Dative.

Votre Meſſage ne m'eſt point du tout agréable. Vos manieres me ſont tout à fait deſagréables. Importun à ſes Amis. Il eſt incommode à tout le Monde. Son humeur eſt inſuportable même à ſes parens. Ce parti vous eſt Avantageux. Il

a un

a un Genie propre à ſon emploi. Un homme enclin à la debauche. Utile au Commerce. Inutile à vos vuës, &c.

(7.) Adjectives of Number and Order; and 2. Conjunctive Pronouns go before the Subſtantive; 3. except when joyn'd to a proper Name, or when two or more are joyn'd to the ſame Subſtantive; 4. alſo theſe following, *Bon, Beau, Demi, Chetif, Galant, Gros, Habile, Honnête, Jeune, Joli, Laid, Mauvais, Mechant, Meilleur, Pauvre, Petit, Vieux, Vaillant, Vilain, Ample, Pire, Moindre,* &c.

5. As alſo moſt Comparatives and Superlatives.

Cent ou *Cens Ans, Trois Semaines, Quatre Mois. Le premier Miniſtre de l'Etat. Le ſecond Pair du Roraume.* 2. *Mon chapeau, ton Epée, cette ſerviette.* 3. *Clement Douzieme, Charles Second. Un Captaine vaillant et Sage. Une fille honnête et ſpirituelle.* 4. *Un Bon Roi. Un beau Veillard. Demi-lune. Une Chetive Creature. Un Galant Homme. Un gros Marchand. Un Habile Peintre. Une Honnête femme,* &c.

5. *Un meilleur Emploi. Une plus mauvaiſe deſtinée. Un plus agreeable ſejour. Moins foible. Le plus grand bonheur. La plus aimable fille du Monde, Les plus beaux Tableux de l'Italie.*

(8.) But when the Adjective of Number ſerves for a Sirname; or, 2. when we cite a Part of a Book, without adding the Article, the Adjective of Number goes after the Subſtantive; and 3. if the Article be added, the Adjective may be plac'd indifferently before or after: 4. Or,

Or, when any Particle, or ſome other Dependency are added.

Charles Quint, Louis Quinze, 2. *Livre premier. Chapitre troiſieme, Article ſecond.* 3. *Le premier Livre,* ou *Le Livre premier. Le ſecond Article,* ou *l'Article ſecond.* 4. *Un tres-beau jour,* ou *un jour tres-beau. Un fort Mechant Homme,* ou *un Homme fort Mechant.*

(9.) Adjectives that come after the Subſtantive are theſe that expreſs 1. Names of Nations, 2. of Colours, 3. Figures, 4. Elementry, or Phyſical Qualities. 5. All Participles Preter; 6. Adjectives ending in *Eſque, If, Il, Ique,* and *Ul,* with theſe, *Conſiderable, Court, Entier, Facheux, General, Incertain, Importun, Languiſſant, Particulier, Peureux, Preferable, Rebelle, Singulier, Tranchant, Vertueux, Vicieux,* &c.

However, this Rule is liable to Exceptions, eſpecially in Poetry: But the Poſſeſſive Relatives, *Le Mien,* &c. *Le Notre,* &c. are always plac'd after their Subſtantive, which they ſuppoſe already declar'd.

1 *Ingenieur Allemand, Muſique Italienne, Legereté Françoiſe;* 2. *Chapeau noir, Habit blanc, Manteau Rouge;* 3. *Maiſon quarrée, Tour ronde.* 4. *Un tems froid. Un lieu, mal Sain. Un air pur. De l'eau tiede* 5 *Un homme cheri, eſtimé. Une femme aimee, adorée. Un Diſcours feint. Chambre garnie, Meublee.* 6. *Une Figure groteſque. Le Stile Burleſque. Un homme Craintif. Un Eſprit retif. Un comportement pueril. Utilité publique. Une femme Credule.* 7. *Un profit conſiderable. Un Chemin Court. Une annee entiere. Un homme facheux. Un Evenement incertain,* &c.

Some

(10.) Some Adjectives may either have, or not have Regimens; as *Senſible*, *Habile*, *Adroit*, and others can have none, as *Infatigable*, *Abſolu*, *Inſatiable*.

C'eſt un homme ſenſible ou *un homme ſenſible à la louange*. *Il eſt Habil*, ou *Habil à ſon Metier*. *Les Mechans ſont adroits*, ou *Adroits a s'inſinuer*. *Un Homme infatigable Un Roy abſolu*. *Il eſt inſatiable*. *On ne dit point inſatiable de voir*.

(11.) If Two Subſtantives be of different Genders, the Adjective common to both agrees with the laſt. 2. But if they are Nominatives of the Verb, the Adjective muſt be in the Plural Maſculine. The beſt Way however is, to avoid this Way of ſpeaking.

Le vent et la pluie violente qu'il faiſoit. *Il avoit les yeux, et la bouche Overte*; but if they are Nominatives, we muſt ſay, *Le vent, et la pluie etoient violens, ſes yeux et ſa bouche etoient Ouverts*.

(12.) The different Poſition of ſome Adjectives varies their Meaning.

Femme ſage, ſage Femme. *Groſſe Femme, Femme groſſe*. *Homme Pauvre, Pauvre Homme*. *Galant Homme*. *Homme Galant*. *Plaiſant Homme, Homme pluſant*. *Le malin Eſprit, un Eſprit malin*. *Certaine nouvelle, Nouvelle Certaine*. *Source vive, d'eau vive, Source de lumiere, fruit meur, meure deliberation*.

(13.) *Neuf*, *Neuve*, *Nouveau*, *Nouvelle*, are thus uſed; the firſt Two for Mechanical Works, and the laſt Two for Works of the Mind and Nature.

Un Habit neuf, un Chemiſe neuve. Un Livre nouveau, un air nouveau, Le monde nouveau. Une Chanſon nouvelle, une Nouvelle faute.

§. *Of the Compariſon of Nouns.*

(1.) There are properly but Three Comparitive Nouns in *French*, which are *Meilleur*, *Pire*, and *Moindre*. The Compariſon of other Nouns, is expreſſed by ſome Articles going before the Nouns; as, *Mieux*, *Plus*, *Moins*; and ſome Conjunctions, as *Si*, *Auſſi*, *Auſſi bienque*, *Auſſi peu*, *Autant*, *de Meme*, *Ainſi*, *non Plus*, *ni Plus ni Moins*, *Tellement*, *de Maniere*, *de Façon*, *ſi Bien*, *d'Autant*, *Outre*, *Savoir*, *Comme*, *non Seulement*, *Mais encore*.

C'eſt un bon Parti, mais l'autre eſt encore Meilleur. (We muſt not ſay, *plus bon*) *Son Conſeil eſt Mauvais, Mais le votre eſt encore pire. Ma Condition eſt pire que jamais; Votre perte eſt moindre que la Mienne*; yet *Moindre* is ſeldom us'd in the Comparative, inſtead of it *Plus petit*; or *Moins* are us'd. *Mieux fait que vous. Plus noble. Moins Belle. Il n'eſt pas ſi riche. Eſt-il ſi ſavant? Il eſt auſſi noble, J'aime l'un auſſi bien que l'autre.*

(2.) Theſe Comparatives muſt be followed by *Que*, and generally govern the Nominative, 2. except *Plus* and *Moins*, which often govern the Genitive of Nouns.

Plus Grand que Cæſar. Plus Eloquent que Ciceron. Elle eſt Mieux faite que ſa ſoeur. Il eſt moins Noble que vous. Je le ſai auſſi bien que Perſonne. Je ne ſuis content non plus que lui. 2. Il à plus de trente Ans. Elle n'a moins de trois mille pieces de portion.

(3.) When

(3.) When a Verb follows *Plus* or *Moins* without a Preposition, not being in the Infinitive, it muſt have *Ne* before it. 2. But if in the Infinitive, and a Preposition or Conjunction go before, it may be omitted.

Il eſt plus habile qu'on ne croyoit; Il eſt plus riche que l'on ne penſe, Elle eſt moins belle qu'on ne l'avoit dit. 2. *Il eſt plus heureux que de regner,* ou *Il eſt plus heureux que s'il etoit Roi; Il ecrit mieux que quand vous le connoiſſiez, Ce cheval eſt moins beau que quand on l'acheta.*

(4.) The other Comparatives don't require the Negative *Ne.*

Elle eſt auſſi belle qu'on me l'a dit; Je l'aime autant que je l'admire; Il n'eſt pas ſi mechant qu'on le debite.

(5.) *Tant* and *Si* taken in the Senſe of *Autant*, are only imploy'd in Negative and Interrogative Prepoſitions; and *Tant* is only uſed before Subſtantives.

Il n'a pas tant de courage que Cæſar, Pompée n'etoit pas ſi ambitieux que Cæſar: Les gens riches ſont-ils ſi heureux? Ont-ils tant de plaiſir? Ils n'ont pas tant de vertu qu'on le croit.

(6.) *Autant* is placed before Verbs, and *Auſſi* before Adjectives; and 2. ſometimes the Comparatives are not followed by a Verb, but it is underſtood.

J'aime Horace autant que je l'admire. J'eſtime les gens de bien autant que je deteſte les vicieux. Cet Auteur eſt auſſi enjoué que ſolide. Il eſt auſſi commode qu'autrefois. Il eſt auſſi mechant que jamais; c'eſt à dire *qu'il a eté.*

(7.) The

(7.) The Supreme or Superlative Degree is expreſt, by placing the Definite Article before *Meilleur*, *Pire*, *Moindre*, *Mieux*, or *Plus*, &c.

C'eſt la meilleur partie qu'on puiſſe prendre. Celle-là eſt la pire de toutes. Je n'y veux pas faire le moindre pas. Sa perſonne eſt la mieux faite du monde. Le plus preſomptueux Auteur eſt ſouvent le plus defectueux. C'eſt la plus aimable Fille que je connoiſſe.

(8.) When the Superlative is followed by a Noun, with which it makes the Compariſon, the Noun muſt be in the Genitive.

Le plus imprudent des Hommes. Le plus ingenieux de Poëtes. Le mieux du Monde. Le meilleur de tous. La pire des deux. Le moindre de ces Inconveniens. La Cadette eſt la moins belle de toutes ſes filles.

(9.) If it is follow'd by a Verb, it muſt be in the Conjunctive, and have *Qui*, or one of its Caſes before it.

L'homme le plus ſavant qui ſoit. Le plus ſage dont j'ai oui parler. C'eſt la plus grande Coquette que je connoiſſe.

(10.) Sometimes the Superlative is expreſs'd by *Très* or *Fort* without any Compariſon, and they demand no Regimen.

C'eſt un très habile Homme. Un homme fort Eloquent. Une Dame très, ou *fort Spirituelle.*

(11.) Theſe Words, *Très*, *Fort*, *Plus*, and *le Plus*, are joyn'd to Adverbs, as well as Adjectives, to form a Comparative or Superlative Senſe.

Très

Très Sensément. Fort Eloquemment. Plus Finement qu'on ne peut exprimer. Le plus Subtilement qu'on puisse imaginer.

CHAP. III. *Of the Use of the Pronouns.*

(1.) THESE Primitive Disjunctive Pronouns, *Moi*, *Toi*, *Soi*, *Lui*, and *Elle*, with their Plurals, are used in the Nominative; 1. Before a Relative; 2. After the Impersonal Verb *C'est*; 3. After a Conjunction; And 4. in an Interrogation.

1. Moi qui vous parle. Toi qui fais l'homme d'importance. Lui qui aime à badiner. Elle qui fait la Prude. 2. C'est vous. Ce n'est pas moi. C'etoit lui qui a fait tout le mal. Ce sont eux qui sont blamables. 3. Ni lui ni moi n'en viendrons à bout. Lui et elle sont partis. 4. Qui a fait cela? Moi, Vous, Lui Elle.

(2.) *Moi* and *Lui* are used in the Dative, after an Imperative.

Donnez-moi, Appertez-moi, Parlez-lui.

(3.) *Moi*, *Toi*, and *Lui*, are used in the Accusative, after Prepositions; and also after Imperatives, *Lui* excepted.

Il va devant Moi. Je marcherai après Toi. Nous courons après Lui. Consolez-moi, Divertis-toi, Tais-toi.

(4.) *Soi* is used in the Singular for Persons in a general Sense; and 2. for inanimate Things. *Elle* contains no Difficulty.

Personne ne parle mal de soi. Une jeune fille doit prendre garde à soi. Chacun agit pour soi. 2. Le Vice est odieux de soi. La terre est de soi fertille. Le pecké porte sa peine avec soi. L'ambre attire à soi la paille.

In

In Feminine Nouns *Elle* may be uſed inſtead of *Soi*, as *la Terre renferme dans ſoi*, ou *dans elle toutes ſortes de Semences.*

N. B. Tu, Toi, and *Te*, are uſed to a Beaſt, to Servants, out of Contempt, in great Familiarity, in Poetry, in the ſublime Stile, and to GOD Almighty; but *Vous* is uſed in Civility, tho' to a ſingle Perſon.

(5.) The Conjunctive Perſonal Pronouns, *Je, Tu, Il, Elle, Nous, Vous, Ils, Elles*, are uſed as the Nominatives of Verbs, and are plac'd before them, except 1. in an Interrogation; or, 2. when the Verb is preceded by certain Expreſſions that connect the Diſcourſe; ſuch as, *Ainſi, Auſſi, Peut-etre, du Moins, au Moins, en Vain*, &c. And 3. theſe Ways of Speaking, *Dûſſiez-vous, Vinſſiez-vous, Puiſſiez-vous, Dit-il, Dites-vous, Dirons-nous*, when they come after the Verb.

Je porte. Tu punis. Il reçoit. Nous viendons. Vous allez. Ils ſont. Elles ſe taiſent. 1. *Que dis-je? Que fais-tu? Qu'en dra-t-on? Où irons-nous? Me croiez-vous capable d'une telle baſſeſſe? Sont-ils ſi mechans?* 2. *Ainſi meritez-vous l'eſtime des honêtes gens. Auſſi ne daignerent-ils m'ecouter. Peut-etre ne viendra-t-il pas. Du moins,* ou *au moins, devriez-vous m'en avertir. En vain le pretendez-vous.* 3. * *Duſſai-je en mourir. Vinſſiez-vous à bout de vos deſſeins. Puiſſiez-vous etre content. Je le ferai dit-il,* ou *dit-elle. C'eſt dites-vous un grand malheur. Voila dirons-nous une choſe nouvelle.*

* *Crebillon.*

(6.) Sometimes the Conjunctive Pronouns governing different Verbs are repeated, and ſometimes not; they are repeated, 1. when in oblique Caſes; 2. When the Verbs are in different Tenſes; 3. When one paſſes from the Affirmative to the Negative; 4. And when they come after *Mais*, or *Même:* In other Caſes they need not be repeated.

1. *Il me prie, et me conjure. Je vous dis et vous declare.* 2. *Je dis et je dirai toujours. Nous avons parlé, et nous parlerons encore pour lui.* 3. *Il le croyoit, et il ne le croit plus.* 4. *Il l'a fait, mais il ne le fait plus. Il le penſe, et même il le dit.* In familiar Diſcourſe it may be diſpenſed with thus, *Il fait, et dit, tout ce qui lui plait.*

(7.) If the Verb has another Nominative without an Interrogation, the Conjunctive Pronoun muſt not be uſed.

Platon Enſeigne, we muſt not ſay, *Platon il Enſeigne*; but we may ſay, *Le Roi aura-t-il la bonté de vous pardonner.*

(8.) If a Verb has for Nominative two Perſonal Pronouns, or two with a Noun, the firſt muſt be a Disjunctive, and the laſt a Conjunctive Pronoun.

Moi je ris. Lui et moi, nous lui parlerons. Ton Camerade et Toi vous ne valez guere. When *Lui* or *Eux* is the laſt, it is ſometimes diſpenſed with in familiar Diſcourſe; as, *Lui et Eux ſont ſemblables. Je demeurai, et lui s'en alla. Mon frere et lui ſont Arivés.*

(9.) If the Verb is placed betwixt ſeveral Perſonals of the ſame Regimen, the firſt muſt be

be a Conjunctive, and plac'd before the Verb; and the others Disjunctive, and plac'd after the Verb.

Je ſoufre et lui auſſi. On me parle auſſi bien qu'a lui et à eux. Je m'arétai, et lui continua ſon chemin.

(10.) *Me, Te, Le, La, Se, Lui, Nous, Vous, Les* and *Leur*, are plac'd before Verbs as their Dative or Accuſative, tho' they are plac'd after them in the *Engliſh*; and 2. when they meet together, the Accuſative goes before the Dative, if of the ſame Perſon; but 3. if of a different Perſon, the Nobler takes the firſt Place.

Il me punit. Je te prie. Je le connois. Vous ne la connoiſſez pas. Il ſe promet. Elle ſe flate. Cela lui coutera cher. Il nous avertit. Elle vous aime. Je les ai conduits. On leur a promis. 2. Je le lui ai donné. Je le leur donnerai. 3. Il me l'a donné. Vous l'a-t-elle dit? Elle ne m'a rien dit. Qui vous l'a dit? Je vous l'ai dit.

(11.) After Imperatives, the Disjunctives *Moi, Toi, Lui, Leur*, muſt be uſed. 2. And when the Verb *Je ſuis* ſignifies to belong; a Disjunctive muſt always be uſed after that Verb, as well as 3. in all other Caſes, except theſe mention'd.

Dites-moi. Montre-toi. Parlez-lui. Donnez-leur. 2. Je ſuis à vous. Cette maiſon ſera un jour à moi. 3. For Example, after Prepoſitions, *Pour moi. Juſqu' à lui. Loin d'eux.* After Verbs, *C'eſt lui. Ce n'eſt pas moi. Qui eſt blamé? Lui et Eux. Il convient à nous, à eux. On rit de vous. Il ſe plaint de nous. On parle de moi, de vous, d'eux.*

(12.) He, She, They, with their oblique Cases before a Relative, are render'd in *French* by *Celui, Celle, Ceux, Celles.*

Celui, Celle, Ceux, Celles, qui feront bien ſur la Terre, ſeront recompenſés dans le Ciel. Je parle de Celui, de Celle, de Ceux, de Celles, qui font leur Devoir. Je l'ai donné à Celui, dont je vous ai parlé. Portez cette Bague à celle que j'adore. J'eſtime Ceux qui aiment leur Patrie.

§. *Of the ſupplying* Pronouns, On, Ce, Le, En, Y.

(1.) The ſupplying Pronoun *On* ſignifies One, I, It, We, You, They, People, and has the Paſſive Voice of an *Engliſh* Verb. 2. It takes an *L* before it, after *Que, Quoi, Si* and *Où* if another *L* does not follow ſoon in the ſame Sentence; and 3. is always repeated with every Verb it governs.

On fait. On me l'à dit. On raporte. On ne vous voit plus. On vous demande. On trompe les Hommes, mais On ne ſauroit tromper Dieu. On parle. On boit de bon vin en France. 2. C'eſt de vous que l'on parle. C'eſt à quoi l'on ne penſe gueres. Si l'on vous a fait Mal. Le lieu où l'on vous a vû. 3. On parle et on agit. On dit et on aſſure.

(2.) *Ce* is uſed in the Nominative both for living and inanimate Things, of what Gender or Number ſoever they be, in Anſwer to the Queſtion by *Ce* and *Cela*; but 2. if the Queſtion be by *Il*, the Anſwer muſt be by *Il*.

Qui eſt-ce? C'eſt un François. Quelle Dame eſt ce-là c'eſt une Angloiſe. Quelles gens ſont ce-là? Ce ſont des Hollandois. Quel Cheval eſt cela? C'eſt un Barbe. Quel grain

eſt

eſt cela? C'eſt de l'orge. Quelle heure eſt ce? C'eſt Midi. 2. Quelle heure eſt-il? Il eſt une heure. Quel tems fait-il? Il fait beau tems.

(3.) *Le* is uſed in the Nominative for all Things, and is of all Genders, and has no Plural, except 2. after *Ce*; yet ſome 3. make it declinable in the Singular.

Vous n'etes pas Docteur, mais Moi je le ſuis. Vous etes le Maitre et moi je ne le ſuis point. J'ai toujours eté heureuſe, et je le ſuis encore. Ils ſont craints comme ils le veulent etre. Elles ſont conſiderées, mais nous ne le ſommes pas. Nous fumes Maltraitées et nous le ſommes encore. 2. Ce l'eſt. Ce ne l'eſt pas. Ce les ſont. Ce ne les ſont pas. 3. Je fus effraiée et je la ſuis encore. J'ai eté malade et la ſerai long tems. But the Sentiments are divided, upon its being declinable in the Singular.

(4.) *En* ſignifies of Him, of Her, of Them, of It, at It, Some, From, Thence. 2. It is alſo uſed when an *Engliſh* Adjective of Number; or an Indefinite Pronoun are uſed ſubſtantively, in an oblique Caſe. 3. Or when the Adjective has no Subſtantive.

C'eſt un Brutal ne m'en parlez pas. C'eſt une Demoiſelle qui a du Merite, n'en avez-vous oui parler? Ce ſont des Mechans je ne veux en entendre parler. Avez-vous vû ces Tableaux, qu'en penſez-vous? Voyez-vous cette Ecriture qu'en dites-vous? J'en ſuis ſurpris. Voila de belles Pêches, venez-en et en mangez. En venez-vous. 2. Combien de ſoeurs avez-vous? J'en ai deux. Je n'en ai point. Avez-vous beaucoup d'argent j'en ai aſſez. 3. En a-t-il? En avez-vous? Je n'en ai pas trop.

(5.) *Y* ſignifies, of It, to It, with It, There in, in It, in Them, There, Thither. *Y* go before *En*, 1. except when it ſerves to form Gerund; 2. when they meet together in th ſame Sentence with *Ne*, it is placed firſt: B 3. if there be a Conjunctive Pronoun in a oblique Caſe, it is placed betwixt the *Ne* an *Y*. 4. They both go before the Verb, exce in the Imperative when there is no Neg tion.

1. *J'y penſerai. Prenez-y garde. Faites-y reflexi Melez-y de l'eau. Et tout ce qu'il y a. J'y ai tro pluſieurs fautes. Y voulez-vous aller. En y allant?* 2. *N en a-t-il. Il n'y en a point. J'y vous en mettrai ſi vo l'agréez.* 4. *Je n'y vous en mettrai ſi vous ne l'ai pas. Y portez-en.*

§. *Of the Uſe of the Poſſeſſive Pronouns.*

(1.) The Poſſeſſive Pronouns, *Mon, Ton, S* are uſed with Maſculine Nouns, and 2. ev with Feminine, beginning with a Vowel, or mute.

1. *Mon, Ton, ſon Pere, Fils, Couſin.* 2. *Mon A Ton Amitié. Son Epée. Mon Hoteſſe. Ton Habit Son Humeur.*

(2.) The ſame Pronouns before the Wo *Sake*, are render'd by the Genitive of their P mitives.

Pour l'amour de moi, de lui, d'elle, de vous, d'eux.

(3.) The ſame *Engliſh* Pronouns before t Word *Houſe*, with the Prepoſition *At* or

are render'd by the Primitives anſwering to them.

Il eſt chez moi. Elle eſt chez vous. Ils ſont chez eux. Il eſt venu chez ſoi. Venez chez moi. Il vient de chez nous.

(4.) An *Engliſh* Poſſeſſive Pronoun going before a Noun in an oblique Caſe, ſignifying a Member of the Body, is render'd by the Articles *Le, La, L', Les.*

Elle a le bras caſſé. J'ai mal à la Tête. Il a perdu l'oeil droit. Lavons-nous les mains. Yet we ſay, *Je vois que ma jambe s'enfle.*

(5.) But if the ſaid Noun be in the Nominative Caſe, it is render'd by the Primitive anſwering to it, and by the Definite Article of the Noun.

La tête me fait mal. Le coeur lui manque. J'ai mal aux yeux. Elle a froid aux mains.

(6.) *Son, Sa, Ses,* are alſo uſed for inanimate Things.

Son Mouvement. Sa Lumiere. Ses Raions. In ſpeaking of the Sun.

(7.) The Poſſeſſive Pronouns muſt always be repeated, as well as the Articles.

Mon Pere, et ma Mere, ſont Morts. Votre frere, et vos ſoeurs ſon ſortis. Il court riſque de ſa vie, et de ſes biens.

(8.) The Abſolute Pronouns *Le Mien, Le Tien, Le Sien, Le Notre, Le Votre, Le Leur,* as well as the other Poſſeſſives, muſt agree in

Gender, Number, and Caſe with the Nouns they are joyn'd with.

Eſt-ce là ſon chapeau? C'eſt le mien. N'eſt ce pas là votre Epée? Oui c'eſt la mienne, &c. Cette Maiſon eſt plus belle que la Notre, plus grande que la Votre, et plus commode que la leur. N'emportez pas ces habits ce ſont les miens.

(9.) *Mine, Thine, His, Hers, Ours, Yours, Theirs,* in the Queſtion *Whoſe*; or when *Je ſuis,* ſignifies *J'apertiens,* are render'd by their Primitives in the Dative.

A qui eſt cette Montre? C'eſt à moi, à lui, à elle. A qui ſont ces Pierreries? Ce ſont à ma mere, à ma ſoeur.

(10.) The Genitive of Abſolute *Engliſh* Pronouns, is render'd by the Poſſeſſive that anſwers to it.

Un de mes Amis. C'eſt un de vos Connoiſſances. Je vis hier un de ſes Parens.

§. *Of the Demonſtrative Pronouns.*

(1.) *Ce, Cet,* and *Cette,* ſignify *This, That*; but *Ce* is uſed before a Noun of the Maſculine Gender, beginning with a Conſonant, or *H* aſpirated; and *Cet* before a Noun Maſculine, beginning with a Vowel, or an *H* mute.

Ce Garçon. Ce Livre. Ce Heros. Cet Enfant. Cet Habit. Cette Femme. Cette Bête. Cette Harangue.

(2.) *Ce* is us'd ſubſtantively, 1. before *Qui* and *Que,* and ſeldom or never expreſs'd in *Engliſh.* 2. It is alſo us'd in Interrogations, in other Caſes,

Caſes, it is an Adjective, and precedes the Nouns.

1. *Ce qui me fache. Ce qu'il vous plaira. Ce que vous dites, à ce que je voi. à ce que j'apprens.* 2. *Qu'eſt ce que ce diſcours?*

(3.) 1. *Ce qui*, or *Ce que*, in the Beginning of an incomplete Phraſe, being the Nominatives of the Verb *Eſt*, makes the *Ce* to be repeated before *eſt*. But 2. if an Adjective follow, it muſt not be repeated. And 3. if a Subſtantive follow, it may be, or omitted.

1. *Ce que je crains, c'eſt d'etre ſurpris. Ce qui me fache, c'eſt qu'on ne m'ecoute pas.* 2. *Ce qui reüſſit eſt toujours aprouvé. Ce qui eſt vrai eſt beau.* 3. *Ce qu'il demande, eſt une penſion,* ou *c'eſt une penſion. Ce que je dis, eſt la verité,* ou *c'eſt la verité.*

(4.) *Ce* is further imployed before *Eſt* in this Way of ſpeaking, *Ce que c'eſt.*

Apprennez-moi, ce que c'eſt. Voyons ce que c'eſt. Qu'eſt ce que c'eſt?

(5.) Sometimes *Ce* in a Sentence ſhould be ſeparate from, tho' follow'd by *Que* to make the Senſe entire. And in this Caſe *Ce* is joyn'd with all the Tenſes of the Verb; and the *Que* on theſe Occaſions takes *De* after it, if an Infinitive follow.

Ce n'eſt pas un malheur, que d'avoir des Envieux. C'eſt une paſſion dangereuſe que l'Amour. Ce ſeront toujours des tourmens que les deſirs. C'eſt une ſorte de honte, que d'etre malheureux.

(6.) *Celui*

(6.) *Celui* and *Celle* are us'd Subſtantively for Things without Life. 2. They are alſo relative to Perſons, when follow'd by *Qui* and *Que*; and in this Caſe *Celui* is 3. ſometimes underſtood, and *Qui* only expreſs'd.

Ne prenez pas ce Chapeau, ceſt celui de mon Pere. N'emportez pas cette Robe, c'eſt celle de ma Mere. 2. Celui qui trompe merite d'etre trompé. Celle qui blame eſt blamée. 3. Qui trompe eſt trompé. Qui blame eſt blamé. Qui fait bien, eſt recompenſé. Malheur à qui m'aura trahi.

(7.) *Celui-ci* and *Celle-ci*, are us'd to ſhew a Perſon or Thing nearer, and *Celui-là*, and *Celle-là*, to ſhew them at ſome Diſtance.

Celui-ci eſt le plus beau. J'aime mieux celle-ci. Celui-là n'eſt pas ſi beau. Je ne veux pas celle-là.

Ceci and *Cela*, This and That, are alſo us'd Subſtantively, and have no Plural. *Cela* relates to an Action we have been ſpeaking of; and *Ceci* to ſuch as we are going to ſpeak of.

Cela merite de l'attention. Ceci va vous ſurprendre.

§. *Of the Relative Pronouns.*

(1.) 1. *Qui* is imploy'd as the Nominative of the Verb for all Sorts of Objects. But, 2. after a Prepoſition, or in the Genitive, it is not us'd, except to Perſonal, or thoſe that are look'd upon as ſuch.

1. *Qui que vous ſoyez. Celui qui aime ſon prochain. Voici un Cheval qui va bien le pas. Voila du vin qui eſt bon.* We muſt not ſay, *Le Cheval ſur qui*, but, *ſur lequel*,

quel, j'ai monté. Nor *La maiſon de qui,* but, *dont j'ai parlé. Dieu de qui nous eſperons la vie eternelle, l'Homme de qui vous parlez. L'Amour à qui vous imputez votre Malheur.*

(2.) *Qui* is not us'd in the Dative to inanimate Things: But to animate, tho' they be not intellectual, it may.

We muſt not ſay, *Le Livre à qui,* but, Auquel, *j'ai repondu.* Nor, *La maiſon à qui,* but à la quelle *j'apertiens.* But we ſay, *Dieu à qui nous devons tout.* And may ſay, *L'oiſeau à qui l'on a coupé les ailes.* Yet, the ſureſt Way is not to imploy the Genitive, *de qui,* nor the Dative, *à qui,* when we are not talking of Perſonal Objects.

(3.) The Genitive *dont,* is 1. us'd equally well for all Objects, and is often better than the other Genitives of *Qui* and *Lequel.* But, 2. it is never us'd in an Interrogation, and it muſt always have its Subſtantive immediately before it; and after it, the Nominative of the Verb.

1 *La femme dont je vous ai parlé. L'Affaire dont je vous ai parlé.* We can't ſay, 2. *Dont parlez-vous?* But, *De qui parlez-vous?* Nor, *Le Ciel dont avec le ſecours.* But, *Le Ciel avec le ſecours duquel,* or *de qui.*

(4.) *Que* is ſometimes us'd 1. for *de qui,* and *à qui,* 2. beſides being the Accuſative of *Qui,* it ſerves alſo to determine the Meaning and Senſe of Verbs as well as of Nouns.

1. *C'eſt de vous que l'on parle. C'eſt à lui que je m'adreſſe.* 2. *Je vois que vous venez. Vous voyez qu'il fait beau.*

(5) Whom

(5.) *Whom*, or *Who* Interrogative, is render'd by *Qui*, and 2. Relative by *Que*.

Qui demandez-vous? Savez-vous Qui a dit cela. Dieu que j'adore. La Perſonne que vous aimez.

(6.) *What* Subſtantively us'd, if Interrogative, is expreſs'd 1. by *Que*. 2. If not, by *Ce que*; and 3. in Anſwer by *Quoi*; but, 4. Adjectively by *Quel*.

1. Qu'eſt-ce? Que faites-vous? 2. Ce que vous dites, eſt vrai ſemblable. Je ne ſai pas, ſi ce que vous me dites, eſt vrai. 3. L'avez vous dit? Quoi! 4. Quel homme eſt ce-là? Quelle Hiſtoire liſez-vous? A quel Uſage le mettrai-je?

(7.) *Which* is render'd 1. by *Quel*, when Adjectively; and 2. by *Lequel*, when Subſtantively us'd in an Interrogation.

Quel eſt le meilleur? Quelle eſt la premiere fin de l'homme. 2. Voici deux Roſignols, lequel des deux voulez-vous? Voila deux Montres, laquelle des deux me conſeillez-vous de prendre. A laquelle de ces deux Regles donnez-vous la Preference?

(8.) The beſt Uſe of *Lequel* and *Laquelle* is, 1. to prevent the frequent Equivocal Meanings, which *Qui* might occaſion; for, they have the Advantage of *diſtinguiſhing* the *Gender* and *Number*, which *Qui* does not. 2. But, when the two Nouns are of the ſame Gender, the Equivocation is not ſo eaſily to be remov'd, till Practice determine. For, except in theſe Occaſions, and to ſhun the too frequent Repetition of *Qui*, it is rather us'd than *Lequel*.

1. *Le*

1. *Le frere de Cleopatre* qui *avec beaucoup d'Addreſſe. Ceſt l'auteur de la Satire* dont *je vous ai parlé.* Qui and Dont make theſe Sentences Equivocal; but *Lequel* in the firſt, and *de laquelle* in the ſecond, remove it. 2. But in theſe, *Alexandre fils de Philippe qui regna en Macedoine. Alexandre fils de Philippe qui perdit l'oeil.* It is not ſo eaſily obviated.

(9.) *Quoi* is of the ſame Uſe as *Qui*, and *Lequel*; except 1. that it is ſeldom us'd but in the Genitive or Dative; and 2. if in the Nominative, it is always govern'd by a Prepoſition. It is of both Genders and Numbers, and us'd 3. interrogatively.

1. *Ceſt de quoi je ne m'embaraſſe gueres. Ce ſont des choſes à quoi je ne penſe plus.* 2. *Je ne ſai pas ſur quoi il fonde ſa conjecture.* 3. *De quoi ſe mele-t-il? A quoi s'amuſe-t-il? Avec quoi l'a-t-il fait?*

(10.) Inſtead of theſe Three Pronouns, *Où* is often us'd, when they may be preceded by the Prepoſitions *Dans*, or *En*; and 2. ſometimes, it is plac'd for the Dative of theſe Pronouns.

Voila une affaire dans laquelle, or, *où je ne veux point entrer*, 2. *C'eſt le but où*, or *auquel il tend. C'eſt un Miſtere où je n'ai pû penterer.*

(11.) The Interrogative Pronouns are the ſame with the Relative, ſave, that *Dont* is never Interrogative. And, 2. that *Que* interrogative is us'd in the Nominative, as well as in the Accuſative, and is of all Genders, and only ſaid of Things; when we ſpeak of Perſons, *Qui* is us'd.

Qui eſt cet homme de qui on ne dit point de mal? De qui parlez-vous? à qui ſe fier? 2. Que ſont les Créatures devant Dieu? Que dites-vous? Lequel choiſiſſez-vous? Duquel ou *deſquels parlez-vous? Quel eſt ce perſonnage? Quelle Dame eſt ce-là? Quoi de plus grand! Sur quoi travaille-t-il?*

§. *Of the Indefinite Pronouns.*

(1.) 1. *Quelque* is Adjective, and ſignifies in the Singular an Object; and in the Plural any Number of Objects taken Indefinitly. 2. Sometimes it ſignifies not the Number, but the Quality, or Quantity undetermin'd of the Things.

1. *Quelque Homme. Quelque Choſe. Quelques Perſonnes. Quelques Affaires.* 2. *Quelque merite qu'on ait, ſi l'on n'a un Protecteur on n'avance guere dans le Monde. Quelque grandes, qu'elles ſoient vos Pretenſions.*

(2.) *Quelque* taken in that Senſe has no Plural before Adjectives; 2. but before Subſtantives it has, and in either of theſe Caſes it muſt have *Que* before the Verb.

Quelque folles que ſoient les modes on les ſuit toujours. 2. Quelques Erreurs que ſuive le Monde on s'y laiſſe ſurprendre. Quelques fautes que vous ayez faites, on vous pardonnera.

(3.) 1. If *Quelque* is immediately follow'd by a Verb, or Perſonal Pronoun in the Nominative, it divides it ſelf into two Words, and then the *Quel* has a Singular, a Plural, a Maſculine and Feminine, and the *Que* is not repeated in the reſt of the Phraſe. 2. If it has a Sub-

a Subſtantive, it is plac'd betwixt the *Quel* and the *Que.*

Quels que puiſſent etre vos deſſeins. Quel que je ſois. Quelles qu'elles puiſſent etre. 2. *A quel prix que ce ſoit. De quelle maniere que ce ſoit.*

(4.) *Quelqu'un* ſignifies ſome Perſon. In that Senſe it has no Feminine, nor Accuſative Plural, but it has a Nominative Plural Maſculine.

Quelqu'un a dit. Je connois quelqu'un. Quelqu'une, *or* Quelques unes, are never ſaid; *nor* Je connois quelques uns; we muſt ſay, *Je connois quelques perſonnes:* We may ſay, *Quelques uns l'ont dit,* in the Nominative.

(5.) It is often taken to ſignify an Indefinite Part of a Number, and then it is joyn'd with the Genitive of another Noun; or with the Particle *En,* which ſtands in Place of a Genitive. 2. Sometimes the Genitive is not expreſs'd, becauſe it is manifeſtly underſtood, or the Noun immediately expreſs'd before.

1. *Quelqu'un d'eux ſera pris. Ces fleurs ſont belles, donnez m'en quelques unes.* 2. *Ces fleurs ſont belles mais quelques unes ont des Epines. On dit que vous avez de belles medailles voyons-en quelques unes.*

(6.) *Aucun, Nul, Pas-un,* and *Perſonne,* are uſed only in the Singular, and take 1. *Ne* after them, when they are Nominatives, and 2. before them, when they are govern'd.

Aucun, ou *Nul des Juges n'a opiné en ſa faveur. Pas un ne me l'a dit, Perſonne n'eſt venu.* 2. *Il n'y a aucun*

cun plaiſir: On ne l'a vû nulle part. Je ne l'ai dit à perſonne.

(7.) 1. *Aucun, Pas-un, Nul* may be uſed ſubſtantively, and are often accompany'd with a Genitive. Or, 2. they may be Adjectives. 3. *Nul* has a Plural, but *Pas-un* and *Aucun* have none. 4. *Nul* ſubſtantively, is never imploy'd in an Interrogation, or when a Negative goes before.

Aucun des Conviés. Pas-un du Conſeil. Nul de vos Parens. 2. *Aucune Juſteſſe. Nulle Exactitude.* 3. *Nuls hommes. Nuls ne l'ont vû.* 4. We muſt not ſay, Nul s'en aperçoit-il, *nor* Il n'y a nul qui le faſſe. *Aucun*, or *Perſonne*, muſt be us'd on theſe Occaſions.

(8.) 1. *Perſonne* ſignifying no Body, has no Article; and if it has an Adjective with it, it muſt in the Maſculine; tho' ſpeaking of a Woman, 2. ſometimes it is Interrogative, and ſignifies ſome Body; and ſometimes *Ne* is joyn'd to that Way of uſing *Perſonne*. But, 3. *Ne* muſt not be us'd with *Pas-un*, in an Interrogation. 4. It ſhould be carefully diſtinguiſh'd from *Perſonne* a Noun Subſtantive, ſignifying a Perſon.

Il faut s'accommoder ſans incommoder Perſonne. 1. *Perſonne n'eſt ſi malheureux qu'elle.* 2. *Perſonne a-t-il trouvé la pierre Philoſophale?* Sometimes we ſay, Perſonne n'a-t-il trouvé. 3. *Pas-un l'a dit, dites vous?* 4. *La perſonne à qui j'ai parlé. Une des trois perſonnes de la ſainte Trinité. Sa perſonne eſt des mieux faites.*

(9.) 1. *Tout, Toute, Tous, Toutes,* is Adjective, and ſignifies *All.* 2. It is ſometimes taken Subſtantively; 3. Sometimes it ſignifies *Every.*

1. *Tout Paris. De toute la France. A tous nos Amis. Dans toutes les Gazètes.* 2. *Tout eſt Vanité.* 3. *Tous les jours ſont de vingt-quatre heures, et toutes les heures de ſoixante Minutes.*

(10.) 1. *Tout* before a Noun follow'd by *Que,* ſignifies *Although.* In that Senſe it is only uſed in the Nominative, and 2. is not declin'd in the Plural Maſculine; nor 3. in the Feminine, before Nouns beginning with a Vowel.

1. *Tout Philoſophe qu'il eſt, il juge ſouvent de travers. Toutes devotes qu'elles ſe diſent, elles n'epargnent pas le prochain.* 2. *Tout Philoſophes qu'ils ſont, ils errent quelque fois.* 3. *Tout etonantes que ſoient ces Avantures, on les a vû ariver.*

(11.) 1. Sometimes the Adjective *Tout* declin'd in this Manner, ſignifies *Intirely*; but if a Subſtantive Feminine and Plural begin with a Conſonant, *Toutes* muſt be put, even in that Senſe.

1. *Il eſt tout fier de ſes ſucces. Elle eſt tout abatue de ſa diſgrace. Ils ſont tout tranſportés de joie. Elles ſont tout eperduës.* 2. *Ce ſont des Nouvelles toutes fraiches.*

(12.) 1. *Qui que ce ſoit* muſt always be followed by *Il* or *Qui,* and 2. ſometimes by both; when it is followed by *Qui,* it ſignifies *Whoſoever,* and by *Il, Whoever he be.* 3. When it

is followed by a Negative, it ſignifies *No Body*. 4. *Quoi que ce ſoit* is ſaid of Things, and ſignifies *Nothing*.

1. *Qui que ce ſoit, il s'en repentira.* 2. *Qui que ce ſoit qui me trompe, il ſera decouvert.* 3. *Qui que ce ſoit ne l'a dit.* 4. *Quoi que ce ſoit n'eſt arrivé.*

The other Indefinite Pronouns contain no Difficulty.

CHAP. IV. *Of the Uſe of Verbs.*

ALthough I have already in *Page* 88, &c. explain'd the Nature of *Moods*, which are ſo many different Manners of expreſſing the ſame Action; and the *Tenſes* or *Times* wherein it may be perform'd; yet it will not be improper to obſerve, when theſe Moods and Tenſes are to be uſed, with Regard to the *Idiom* of the Language, and *Rules* of *Syntax*. And firſt of the *Moods*:

(1.) The Indicative Mood is uſed to expreſs the Action *Simply*, and without any *Dependance*; as,

J'écris. Je ſuis touché de votre Malheur. J'écrivois une Lettre quand vous arivates. J'etois encore au Lit quand il m'apela. J'écrivis à M-e La Comteſſe il y a huit jours. Je fus debout hier pendant deux heures. J'ai vû mon frere aujourdui. Vous avez eté en Italie. J'avois fini mon Diſcours quand il entra. Quand nous eumes ſoupé nous fumes au Bal. J'écrirai demain. Je ſerai guerì dans huit jours. J'aurai fini mon Ouvrage quand vous commencerez le votre. J'écrirois a M. N. ſi j'avois

le

le Tems J'aurois eu beaucoup de Plaiſir ſi vous aviez eté de la Partie.

(2.) It is alſo uſed after the Conjunctions *Comme, Si, Quand même,* &c. And even after ſeveral of thoſe that terminate in *Que*; ſuch as, *Parce que, Puis que, Lors que, à Condition que,* &c.

Comme je ſavois la choſe. Je ſerois mortifié s'il perdoit ſon Procès. Quand j'eus parlé. Quand même vous l'auriez, ou *vous l'euſſiez dit. Parceque vous etes venu. Puiſque vous le voulez. Lorſque nous etions à Rome. Je vous le donne à condition que vous me le rendrez demain.*

The *Imperative Mood* ſhall be conſider'd among the Tenſes.

(1.) The Conjunctive Mood is uſed after theſe Conjunctions, *Afin que, Avant que, Si ce n'eſt que, Juſqu'a ce que, Sans que, Soit que, Bien que, Quoi que, Encore que, Bien loin que, à Dieu ne plaiſe que, Dieu veuille que, Plût à Dieu que, Supoſé que, Pourvû que, Excepté que, Devant que, Auparavant que, Au cas,* or *en cas que, Quoi que, à moins que, Non obſtant que, De ſorte que, Tellement que, De peur que, à moins que, De crainte que.* But the three laſt take *ne* after them.

Afin que vous lui diſiez. Avant que vous faſſiez cela. Pourvû que vous teniez votre Parole. En cas que je ne réüſſiſſe pas. Quoi qu'il l'ait fait. Plût à Dieu que j'euſſe vû. A moins que vous ne le preveniez. De peur, ou *de crainte qu'il n'aille dire.*

(2.) Verbs that expreſs ſome Paſſion, or Sentiment of the Soul; as, *Vouloir, Admirer, S'etonner, Deſirer, Commander, Defendre, Prier, Craindre, Douter, Perſuader, Apprehendre, Avoir peur, Etre ſurpris, Etre faché, Ordonner, Prendre garde, Permetre, Pretendre, Souhaiter, Se ſoucier, Faire enſorte, Regreter,* &c. govern the Prepoſition *Que* with the Subjunctive.

Je veux que vous ſoyez obeïſſant J'admire que vous veniez ici. Je deſire que vous le faſſiez. Je ne doute pas que vous obeïſſez. J'attends qu'il vienne. Je doute que, ou *je ſouhaite que vous réüſſiſſiez. Je crains que vous ne ſoyez chargé de cette affaire. Prenez garde que vous ne ſoyez attrappé.*

(3.) But if theſe Verbs have a Noun, or Pronoun for Regimen, they govern an Infinitive: As alſo 2. if the Nominative of theſe Verbs ſhould be the ſame with the Verb following.

Je vous commande d'agir. Je vous ordonne de faire. 2. *Je veux etudier. Je ſuis faché d'apprendre qu'elle ſe porte mal.*

(4.) 1. After all Verbs that have *Ne* or *Si* before them. Or, 2. imploy'd in an Interrogation. Or, 3. after the Impersonals *Il faut, Il eſt à propos, Il eſt difficile,* or thoſe of the ſame Signification.

1. *Je ne crois pas que vous mentiez. S'il raporte qu'il l'ait veu.* 2. *Eſt-il certain que cela ſoit.* 3. *Il faut que j'aille. Il eſt à propos que vous preniez des precautions ſur cela.*

(5.) On

(5.) On theſe Occaſions the Indicative may ſometimes be as elegantly uſed as the Subjunctive; and it ſeems even preferable after Verbs ſignifying, I ſay, I declare, I affirm.

Si vous dites que je ne ſuis pas ſincere. M'aſſurez-vous qu'il viendra bien tot, rather than *Je ne ſois,* and *Qu'il vienne. Je crois qu'il lui ſera difficile d'en venir à bout. S'il eſt à propos d'en parler maintenant.*

(6.) After the Verb *Il ſemble,* without a Regimen, the Subjunctive is preferable to the Indicative; but 2. if it has a Conjunctive Pronoun for a Regimen, the following Verb muſt be in the Indicative.

Il ſemble que vous n'aiez rien vû. 2. *Il me ſemble que vous avez peur. Il vous ſemble que je n'ai rien fait.*

(7.) If the Verb be in the Subjunctive, and a third follow, it muſt alſo be in the Subjunctive.

Maſſurez-vous qu'il s'attende que je vienne. Croyez-vous qu'il ſouhaite que j'y aille.

(8.) After *Quel* or *Quel que,* ſignifying *Whatever*; or, 2. *Quoi que,* ſignifying *Whatſoever*; or, 3. after *Que* imploy'd, inſtead of repeating the Conjunction *Si,* or 4. *Que,* taken for *de ce que.*

Quels que ſoient les Hommes. Quelle que ſoit la Malice du Coeur. Quel ques Amis que j'aie 2. *Quoi que je faſſe.* 3. *Si vous le vouiez, et que vous preniez des Meſures.* 4. *Je ſuis ſurpris que vous n'en parliez point.*

(9.) After the Relative *Qui*, preceded by a Superlative, or a Negative Pronoun. And 2. after *Qui*, in all its Caſes, placed betwixt Verbs, in ſuch a Manner, that it points out ſome Deſire, or Want. But 3. if the *Qui* marks neither of theſe, the Verb is put in the Indicative.

Le meilleur parti qui ſe puiſſe trouver. Le plus beau qui ſoit. Perſone, ou *Nul que je ſache.* 2. *Il faut des Magiſtrats qui faſſent leur devoir. Je veux une femme qui ſoit belle. Choiſiſſez un Ami, que vous eſtimiez. Cherchez-vous un guide qui vous ſeduiſe?* 3. *Je cherche un homme qui m'eſt venu trouver.*

(1.) The Infinitive Mood is elegantly uſed after theſe Prepoſitions, *à fin de, à moins que de, Au lieu de, Avant,* ou *devant que de, Bien loin de, Crainte de, De peur de, Plutôt que de, Faire ſemblant de.*

A fin de l'attraper. A moins que de le chaſſer. Au lieu de m'obéir. Loin de vous blamer. Crainte de l'irriter. Avant que de boire. Sans faire ſemblant de ſavoir. Je mourrois plutôt que de trahir mon Ami.

(2.) The Infinitive is alſo uſed after theſe Prepoſitions, *De, A, Pour, Sans, Aprés, A force de, Juſqu'à, Faute de,* and *Par* after Verbs of Beginning or Finiſhing.

Je n'ai pas le tems de lire. J'ai une Lettre à écrire. La Guerre eſt à Craindre. Je viens pour vous dire. On l'a mis en Priſon pour avoir derobé. Il eſt parti ſans dire adieu à perſone. On ne peut vivre ſans reſpirer. Aprés avoir ainſi parlé. A force d'etudier On devient ſavant. Juſqu'a aire des injures. Il a commencé par boire.

(12.) It

(3.) It is alſo uſed like Nouns Subſtantive, as the Nominative of Verbs.

Etudier eſt la plus utile des Occupations. Enſeigner eſt une choſe que peu de Perſones ſachent faire.

§. *Of the Uſe of the Tenſes.*

(1.) The *Preſent* contains no Difficulty, only the Hiſtorians, Orators, and Poets, paſſing from Naration to Deſcription, uſe it ſometimes to repreſent a paſt Action, with more Beauty and Life.

Mentor montre dans ſes yeux une Audace qui etonne les plus fiers Combatans, il prend un Bouclier, &c. Il range les ſoldats d'Aceſte, il marche a leur Tête, et s'avance en bon ordre vers les Ennemis.

(2.) The *Imperfect* is uſed, when we ſpeak of an Action which was not finiſh'd, when another happen'd. Or, 2. when the Word *Alors*, then, or at that Time, is expreſs'd, or underſtood. As alſo 3. when an Action is performing in the Time of another.

J'écrivois quand il entra. Il aimoit le jeu dans ſa Jeuneſſe. 2. Nous etions alors à Paris. Je le croyois honête homme, mais je me ſuis trompé. 3. J'ai rencontrè deux hommes qui ſe querelloient.

(3.) The *Perfect* Tenſe, which is alſo called the *Definite*, is uſed when the Time of the Action is determin'd. 2. It is alſo uſed when the Doer of the Action is dead. But if the Action be done the ſame Day; 3. Or a Part of

the Time mention'd be yet to run, the *Preter-perfect*, or *Compound Tenſe*, muſt be uſed.

J'etudiai l'année precedente. Il ariva la ſemaine paſſée. Je le vis hier. 2. Alexandre attaqua et defit Darius. Cæſar paſſa les Alpes. 3. Je lui ai parlé ce Matin. J'ai perdu mon tems cette Année. Il a fait cela ce printems. J'ai fait cela preſentement. Il eſt parti il n'y a qu'un Moment.

(4.) This Tenſe, which is alſo called *Indefinite*, is uſed when the Time of the Action is not determin'd; or, 2. when the *Engliſh* Preterperfect has *Depuis*, or *Depuis que*, after it.

Je leur ai ſouvent dmontré leur injuſtice. Il n'a point eté en ville cette Année. 2. Le Roi de France n'a jamais eté heureux depuis la Bataille de Hochſtet. L'Ecoſſe n'a jamais proſperé depuis que l'Union a eté faite.

(5.) The ſecond Compound, or Compound of the Imperfect, marks, that in a certain determin'd Time, the Thing of which we are ſpeaking was already paſt.

J'av is pris mes meſures quand on eſt venu me ſoliciter. Il avoit ceſſé de p. rler quand vous entrates.

(6.) The ſecond Pluperfect, or Compound of the Perfect, has almoſt the ſame Signification with the Perfect; only it implies ſomewhat of Poſteriority, and is uſed, when *Quand*, *Auſſi-tôt*, or *Pas plutôt*, go before an *Engliſh* Pluperfect.

Quand j'eus fini ce que je pretendois. Quand il eut appris la Mort de ſon Pere. Auſſi-tôt qu'il eût donné ordre. On n'eut pas plutôt attaqué les Ennemis.

(7.) The

(7.) The Future marks a Thing, that will be in a Time that is not yet come, and ſo has no Difficulty.

Le jugement univerſel ariuera. Je le ferai demain.

(8.) The Compound of the Future marks a Time, that when a Thing, that is not as yet, happens, another will be paſt; as,

Quand je l'aurai achevé, je vous l'envoyerai. Auſſi-tôt que je ſerai venu, j'irai la voir.

(9.) The Conditional Preſent denotes, that a Thing may happen upon ſome Conditions, and is to be us'd, when there is no Negation. Or, 2. when it has *Si*, *Quand*, or *Quand-même* before it.

Je croyois qu'il ſe comporteroit, mieux. Vous ſouteniez qu'il viendroit aujourdui J'ai toujours dit qu'il ariveroit aujourdui. Je vous donnerois de l'argent ſi j'en avois. Quand-même je le ferois qu'enſuiveroit-il de là.

(10.) The Conditional Paſt marks, that ſomething would have hapen'd, if certain Things had taken Place; as,

J'aurois, ou *j'euſſe eu la Fièvre ſi j'avois mangé de ce fruit. Il auroit eté faché contre moi ſi j'avois parlé d'avantage.*

(11.) The Imperative Mood or Tenſe is us'd in commanding, or forbiding, it has no firſt Perſon ſingular, and the ſecond Singular, and the firſt and ſecond Perſons Plural, have no Nominatives.

Parle.

Parle. Parlons. Parlez, ne parle pas. Ne parlons pas. Ne parlez pas. Leve-toi. Levons nous. Va-t-en. Allons nous-en.

(12.) The Preſent of the Conjunctive, or the Compound of the Preſent are to be imploy'd when the foregoing Verb is in the Preſent, or Future Tenſe.

Il faut que je liſe, or, *il faudra que je liſe. Je ne crois pas qu'il le faſſe, je ne doute pas qu'il le faſſe. Il faut que je me ſois trompé Penſez-vous que je l'aie fait?*

(13.) Obſerve here, that the Preſent of the Conjunctive deſigns the Future, as well as the Preſent; in ſo far as a Time that could be expreſs'd by the Future of the Indicative may be expreſs'd by the Preſent of the Conjunctive.

Croiez-vous qu'il viendra bien-tôt, Croiez-vous qu'il vienne.

(14.) And the Imperfect, when the Imperfect or Compound Preſent of the Indicative have a Negative before them; or, 2. when the Compound Paſt has *Si* before it, and ſo of its Compound.

Je ne Savois pas qu'il le voulût faire, Je n'ai pas cru qu'il fût ſi pauvre, 2. Si j'avois ſçû qu'il fût ſi genereux. Je ſouhaitois, je ſouhaitai, j'ai ſouhaité, j'avois ſouhaité, j'aurois ſouhaité, que que vous euſſiez plus de Satisfaction. Quoique vous l'euſſiez fait, Bien qu'il l'eût dit.

(15.) Obſerve, That *one Tenſe* is ſometimes *imployed* for *another*; and particularly the Preſent for the Future: But, then it muſt be joyn'd

joyn'd with ſome Word, that marks a Future.

Où allez-vous ce ſoir. Je pars demain. Ce ſoir and *Demain* mark a Time to come.

§. *The Syntax of Verbs.*

(1.) A Verb muſt have a *Noun*, or a *Pronoun* for Nominative, and when it has both, they muſt not be ſuch, as might ſignify the ſame Thing.

Ciceron parle, Il inſtruit toujours. But we muſt not ſay, *Ciceron il parle*, or, *Ciceron il inſtruit toujours.*

(2.) The Verb muſt agree in *Number* and *Perſon* with its *Nominative.* See Examples in *Numb.* 4. *Cap.* I.

(3.) When the Pronoun *Ce* is the Nominative of *Etre*, it governs always in the Singular. Except 1. commonly in the third Perſon Plural of the ſimple Tenſes; however, 2. in the Imperfect and uncertain Tenſes, when follow'd by *Eux*, or *Elles*; *Ce* governs the Singular as well as the Plural.

C'eſt moi. Ce fut vous. Ce ſera vous Autres. ç'avoit eté Eux. 1. *Ce ſont de bonnes Gens. Ce furent Eux. Ce ſeront les Saints qui jouïront de la paix eternelle.* 2. *Ce-toit eux qui ſe plaignoient. Ce ſeroit Elles qui devroient ſe plaindre.*

(4.) The ſame Pronoun joyn'd with *Etre*, in an Interrogation will have the Verb in the Singular, tho' ſpeaking of ſeveral Objects in all

all the Perſons and Tenſes. Except 1. the third Plural of the Preſent; and 2. even then before *Eux* and *Elles* the Singular to be put.

Eſt-ce nous qui parlons? Eſt-ce vous tous, qui vous engagez? Etoit-ce là les affaires dont il s'agiſſoit? Fut-ce les Soldats qui commencerent? Sera-ce les richeſſes qui feront votre bonheur? 1. Sont-ce les honeurs qui vous flatent? 2. Eſt-ce Eux? Eſt-ce elles qui le diſent?

(5.) After the Relative *Qui*, the Verb muſt be put in the ſame Perſon with the Noun or Pronoun, to which *Qui* refers.

Moi qui ſuis. Vous qui ſavez. Eux qui ordonnent. Practice allows, *C'eſt moi qui l'a fait*, to be ſaid in a familiar Way; but never allows, *C'eſt vous qui l'a fait*, to be ſaid.

(6.) Several Nominatives of the ſame Verb, require it in the Plural. See Examples, *Numb.* 5. *Cap.* I.

(7.) A Verb that has many Nominatives of different Perſons, muſt agree with the nobler Perſon. *Numb.* 6. *Cap.* I. And the Perſon ſpeaking ſhould always name himſelf laſt.

(8.) If ſeveral Nominatives are joyn'd by any other Conjunction, than *Et*, the Verb ought rather to be in the Singular than in the Plural. And 2. when the Nominative, joyn'd by any Conjunction, comes after the Verb, it may be put either in the Singular or Plural: But, 3. if one of the Nominatives be in the Plural, the Verb muſt be ſo too.

Gaſſendi

Gaſſendi auſſi bien que Des Cartes a reformé la Philoſophie, rather than *ont reformé*. 2. *Le Prince, que demandoit egalement le Senat, et le Peuple*; or, *Demandoient*. 3. *Le Prince autant que les Peuples aſpirent à la Paix*.

(9.) After *L'un et l'autre*, *Ni l'un, ni l'autre*, the Verb may be put either in the Singular or Plural And ſo of their Compounds, but the Singular is more us'd.

L'un et l'autre le veut, ou, *le veulent*. *Ni l'un, ni l'autre ne le pretendent*, ou. *ne le pretend*.

(10.) If the laſt Nominative has before it, *Mais* or *Tout*, the Verb muſt be of the ſame Number with the laſt Nominative.

Non Seulement mes richeſſes, Mais auſſi mon repos, fut ſacri fié. Mes biens, mes Avantages, et tout mon Repos fut ſacrifié.

(11.) To ſhun the harſh Sound, which the Pronoun *Je* makes in Interrogations with ſome Verbs of one Syllable, ſuch as, *Mens-je, Dors-je, Sors-je*; it is better to ſay, *Eſt-ce que je Mens*, &c. Or, to give the Expreſſion another Turn, ſuch as, *Croyez-vous*, ou *penſez-vous que je dors?* &c.

(12.) An Active Verb governs the Accuſative. 2. When it has a Reſpective Regimen, it governs a Dative. 3. *Avoir*, *Pouvoir* and *Vouloir*, tho' not Active Verbs, govern alſo the Accuſative.

J'aime la vertu, ou *la vertu, que j'aime*. 2. *J'ai donné cent piſtoles à mon Ami*. 3. *Avez-vous faim? Avez-*

vous

vous vû le Roy? ſi je le pouvois, j'e le ſirois. Que voulez-vous?

(13.) A Paſſive Verb governs the Genitive; except 1. when they ſignify a Corporal Action, and then they govern the Accuſative. But 2. when they ſignify interiour Acts of the Mind, they take ordinarly *De*. And 3. when the Queſtion is about Actions, that participate of the Nature of both, either *De* or *Par* may be us'd. But, the ſureſt is to imploy *Par*, becauſe there are ſome Occaſions where *De* cannot be us'd.

La vertu eſt eſtimée de tous. Il eſt aimé de Dieu. 1. *Ila eté arreté par un Officier. Il a eté tué par ſes Domeſtiques.* 2. *Il eſt eſtimé des ſavans. Il eſt aimé de tout le Monde.* 3. *Il eſt loué de beaucoup de Gens,* ou *par beaucoup de gens. Il a eté felicité des ſavans,* ou *par les ſavans.* We muſt ſay, *Il a eté prevenu, Propoſé, Joue, Compoſé, écrit par,* and not by *De*; yet, *Je ſuis entouré de gens Ennuyeux,* may be ſaid.

(14.) Verbs ſignifying the Affection or Paſſion of the Soul, govern the Genitive; as, *Avoir pitié, Avoir Compaſſion, Avoir envie, Se flater, Se rejouir, Conjurer, Prier, Pourvoir, Deliberer, Avoir honte, Avoir horreur, Avoir peur, S'emporter, S'allarmer, Se chagriner, S'ennuyer, S'etonner, S'inquieter, Se plaindre, Se reſſentir, Se repentir, Preſſer de, Enrager de, Crever de, Diſputer de.*

Aiez pitié de nos Malheurs. Aye compaſſion de nos infirmités Seigneur. Il a l'envie de ce Tableau. Il ſe flate de folles Eſperances. Je me rejouis de votre bonheur. Il

y a eté conjuré de ſes Parens. J'ai honte de ſa Lacheté. On auroit horreur de ſes Crimes. Il a peur de ſon Ombre. Ne vous emportez pas de Colere. Il s'allarme de peu de choſe. Vous vous chagrinez de bagatelles. Il s'ennuye de la lecture Je m'etonne de votre effronterie. Ne vous inquietez point de cela. Il ſe plaint de ſon Accueil. Il ſe reſſent encore de ſes Pertes. Il s'eſt repenti de ſes Extravagances. Il eſt preſſé de miſere. Votre Pere s'enrage de vos deportemens. Il creva de rire. On diſpute de la Religion.

(15.) Alſo theſe Verbs, *Jouir de, Uſer de, Se ſervir de, Vivre de, Se nourrir de, Mourir de, Diſcourir de, Deſiſter de, Detourner de, Parler de, Medire de, Se reſſouvenir de, Faire mention de*; and all Verbs that have a Subſtantive after their Infinitive, as, *Avoir ſoin de, Faire etat de.*

Il jouit d'un grand Revenu. Uſer de douceur, de violence. Je me ſervirai de vôtre protection. Il vit des herbes. Il ſe nourrit de grandes Eſperances. Je meurs d'envie. Il diſcourt de l'Exiſtence de Dieu. Il deſiſte de ſes Péchez. Detourne-nous du Mal. Parlons de quelque autre choſe. Il ne faut point médire de ſon prochain. Je me reſſouviens de cette affaire. Sans faire mention de vous. 2. J'aurai ſoin de vos Affaires. Faites etat de cela.

(16.) A great many *Neutral*, and the moſt Part of *reflected Verbs* govern the *Genitive* of a *Noun*, and the *Infinitive* of a *Verb*; as *S'abſtenir de, S'aviſer de, Avertir de, Se charger de, Etre faché, Preſſer, Etre content.*

Il s'abſtient du vin, ou *de boire du vin. Il s'eſt repenti de ſa faute*, ou *il ſe repent d'avoir fait cette faute. Je ſuis faché de cela. Je me deſſerai de moi même. Je ſuis content*

content de mon ſort. Il eſt preſſé de tout le monde d'y aller.

(17.) Verbs of Accuſing, Condemning, Abſolving, Admoniſhing, Reproving, Rebuking, Cenſuring, govern a Genitive for the Thing, and an Accuſative for the Perſon; as do 2. Verbs of Praiſe and Diſpraiſe.

On l'actuſe du crime de léze Majeſté On le condamne de trop d'Orgueil. On l'a renvoyé abſous de ce fait. Je vous avertis de votre danger. Tout le Monde le reproche de Témérité. Ce Livre a eté cenſuré des Critiques. 2. On le loue de ſa generoſité. On a blamé ce General d'Imprudence.

(18.) Neutral Verbs, and the Subſtantive Verb *Je ſuis* govern the Nominative abſolutely; but 2. reſpectively they govern the Dative; as, *Plaire, Deplaire, Parvenir, Nuire, S'adonner, S'arreter, S'attacher, Reſſembler, S'heurtrer, Pretendre,* in the Senſe of *Aſpirer, Appartenir, Etre.*

Il eſt, il devient, il paroit, il ſemble, tout autre. 2. Il eſt devenu inſuportable à tous. Pour plaire à Dieu. Il eſt importun à ces Amis. Ses Manieres deplaiſent à tout le Monde. Il parvint à cette charge. Il ne faut nuire à Perſonne. Il s'attache à lui. Il reſemble à ſon Pere. Elle s'heurte à ſon Opinion. Il pretend à cet Emploi. Cette Montre apartient à un Mi-lord. Ce Livre eſt à moi.

(19.) Verbs of Giving, Attributing, and Taking from, govern a Dative for the Perſon, and an Accuſative for the Thing; as, *Donner, Accorder, Allouer, Ajuger, Apporter, Aſſigner, Baailler, Envoyer, Offrir, Marquer, Payer, Preſenter,*

ſenter, Perſuader, Procurer, Promettre, Soubaiter, Vouloir du bien à qulqu'un, Rendre, Reſtituer, Atribuer, Conſeiller, Montrer, Acquerir, Oter, Acheter, Tirer, Enlever, Prendre, Derober, Refuſer, Reprocher, Accoutumer, Travailler, Prendre plaiſir, Se prendre, S'en prendre take a Noun or Pronoun in the Dative.

Il s'en attribue toute la gloire. Mes ſervices vous ſont tous acquis. Vous m'en otez tout le plaiſir. Je vous donne cette Montre. Elle m'a accordé cette grace. On m'a alloué cet Article. On lui a ajugé gain de ſa Cauſe. Apportez moi mon Manteau. On lui a aſſigné une Penſion. Baillez-moi ce Livre. Envoyez-moi votre Caroſſe, &c. Il ſe prit à moi. Je m'en prens à Vous.

(20.) The Verb *Etre* joyns it ſelf alſo with Adjectives that govern the Dative; ſuch as, *Etre prêt, Habile, Propre, Enclin, âpre. Etre le premier, le dernier, heureux.*

Il eſt prêt à tout. Il eſt fort habile à ſon Metier. Cet Utenſile eſt propre à certains Uſages. Vous etes trop enclin à la Satyre. Cet homme eſt âpre au gain. Vous etes le premier à cela Vous etes toujours heureux au Jeu.

(21.) The following Verbs govern the Infinitive with the Participle *De, Aprehender, Craindre, Empêcher, Refuſer, Feindre, Se hater, Permettre, Promettre, Propoſer, Regreter, Reſoudre.* And the Impersonals, *Il vous appartient, C'eſt à vous,* and *Il eſt* joyn'd to an Adjective.

J'apprehendois, ou je craignois de vous deplaire. Vous m'empêchez de faire mon Devoir. Il a refuſé d'y aller. Elle fait feinte de l'aimer. Mentor ſe hata de répondre. S'il m'eſt permis de parler ainſi. Il m'a promis de vous obeir.

beir. Vous me propoſez de l'epouſer. Il regrete, ou *reſout de le faire. It vous apartient de donner ordre là-d ſſus. Ç'eſt à vous de,* ou *à parler. Il eſt Utile,* ou *Glorieux de le ſervir.*

(22.) The Verb *Perſuader* governs the Accuſative, if it is not follow'd by an Infinitive; but if it is, it governs the Perſon in the Dative.

Je les ai perſuadez. 2. Je leur ai perſuadé de finir leur differend.

(23.) The Verbs *Contraindre, Diferer, Se hazarder, Commencer,* govern alſo the Infinitive either with *de* or *à*. 2. *Eſperer, Deſirer,* and *Soubaiter,* may be uſed without *de* added to the following Infinitive; but it is better to have it. *Continuer, Forcer, S'efforcer, Engager, Obliger, Exhorter, Manquer, Eſſayer, Tacher,* take alſo the Infinitive with *De* or *A*.

Nous fumes Contraints d' y aller, ou *à les Suivre. Il à diferé de partir. Il ſe hazarda à parler. Le Ciel commença à s'eclaircir. 2. J'eſpere d'y reüſſir. Nous Eſperons ariver,* ou *d'ariver. Je deſire vous voir,* ou *de vous voir. Elle continuoit à regarder,* ou *de regarder. Vous me forcez de faillir,* ou *à faillir. Il s'efforça à faire voir,* ou *de faire voir, qu'il avoit Raiſon. &c.*

(24.) *De* is alſo uſed to Infinitives, after Verbs, to which ſome Nouns without Articles are joyn'd; as, *Avoir Congé, Envie, Permiſſion, Coutume, Beſoin, Sujet, Droit, Raiſon, Tort, Occaſion.* On theſe Occaſions however it would ſeem, that the Noun governs the Infinitive, rather than the Verb.

Il

Il avoit permiſſion d'aller à la Cour. Il avoit Congé de ſe demettre de ſa Charge; Il a envie d'acheter cette Terre. Vous avez coutume de vous coucher de bonne heure. J'ai beſoin d'emprunter de l'Argent.

(25.) *De* is alſo placed before Infinitives of Verbs govern'd by *Je ſuis*; and 2. if *Ce* goes before *Eſt*, it is better to place *Que* before *De*; ſometimes 3. it may be omitted; but this Omiſſion proves often Defective, and lays one open to Equivocation.

Je ſuis heureux de ſavoir m'occuper. Il eſt facheux de vivre avec des Ecervelés. 2. C'eſt un plaiſir que de vivre avec lui. 3. C'eſt etre coupable de ne pas proteger l'Innocence. Que de ne pas, is preferable.

(26.) Sometimes theſe Infinitives are found by Tranſpoſition, at the beginning of a Phraſe, and in that Caſe, the *Que* before *De* may be omitted.

De croire qu'on en impoſera au genre humain, c'eſt une chimere. De preferer la vie à l'honneur c'eſt baſſeſſe c'eſt lacheté.

(27.) The Verb *Il y a*, on divers Occaſions, governs the Infinitive, with the Particle *A*.

Il y a à craindre qu'il ne le faſſe. Il y a du plaiſir à la chaſſe, ou à chaſſer. Il n'y rien à eſperer. C'eſt à recommencer, is alſo ſaid, inſtead of, *Il faut recommencer.*

(28.) Verbs implying Knowledge or Speech, have after them *Que*, with the Indicative. 2. *Je crois*, and *Je penſe*, can be elegantly expreſſed with the following Verb in the Infini-

tive. And 3. the others, except *Je connois*; and *Je vois* may alſo diſpenſe with *Que*, but commonly with leſs Elegancy.

Je vois, je dis, je conjeſſe, je reconnois, j'avoue, je publie, je ſoutiens, que la Raiſon, eſt de tous les Pays. 2. *Vous croyez, vous penſez faire des Merveilles*, rather than, Que vous faites des Merveilles. 3. *Il publie, il dit, il ſoutient, avoir entendu ces propres Mots*; inſtead of, Qu'il a entendu.

(29.) Verbs which denote the Motion of the Soul, take *Que* with the Conjunctive Mood.

J'admire que vous veniez ici. Je doute que vous le faſſiez. Je ne doute pas que vous n'obeiſſez.

(30.) Some Verbs followed by an Infinitive have a particular Employ, which muſt be obſerv'd, becauſe of their frequent Uſe. *Je vais* marks a Thing one is to do immediately; and *Je viens*, with the Prepoſition *De*, a Thing newly done. The ſame Verb follow'd by *A*, and an Infinitive, ſignifies ones preparing to do a Thing.

Je vais partir. Je vais le querir. Je viens d'arriver. Il vient de ſortir. Quand je vins à chanter. Lorſqu'il vint à parler.

(31.) *Je penſe* in the Preterit, follow'd by an Infinitive, denotes what one was on the Point of doing, but did it not.

Il penſa Mourir. Vous avez penſé tomber. Il penſa etre tué.

(33.) *Connoitre* and *Savoir* are thus diſtinguiſh'd, *Connoitre* is uſed for Perſons or Things that

that are known by Sight; but if the Knowledge depend upon the Understanding, or if the Verb, To know, is follow'd by *Whom*, *Which*, *What*, *Whither*, or *Where*, or by the Conjunction *That*, then it is expres'd by *Savoir*.

Je vous connois. La connoiſſez-vous. Je connois cet homme, ce chien, cette Maiſon. Savez-vous des Nouvelles? Votre Leçon, la Geometrie, la Muſique? Je ſai qui vous cherchez. Savez-vous lequel des deux j'ai choiſi? Sait-il quelle heure il eſt? Il ne ſait pas ce qu'il dit. Je ne ſai, s'il viendra Aujourdui. Savez-vous où il demeure? Je ſai qu'il eſt aſſez heureux dans tout ce qu'il entreprend.

(33.) *Il faut* is uſed either with *Que*, and the Verb in the Conjunctive Mood; or 2. with the Infinitive Mood, and a Perſonal Pronoun in an oblique Caſe; or 3. with a Noun Subſtantive in the Genitive Caſe; or 4. abſolutely in the End of a Sentence.

Il faut que j'aille. Il faut que tu payes. Il faut qu'il prenne garde. Il faut que nous partions. Il faut que vous remarquiez. Il faut qu'ils faſſent cela. 2. Il me faut aller. Il te faut payer. Il lui faut prendre garde. Il nous faut partir. Il vous faut remarquer. Il leur faut faire cela. Il me le faloit faire. Il vous l'auroit falu faire. S'il leur l'eut falu faire. Faudra-t-il, ou faudroit il le dire? 3. Il faut de l'argent. Il faloit du Tems. Il faudra des Amis. 4. Cela eſt comme il faut, ou faloit.

(34.) *Devoir* expreſſes a Duty of Conſcience, Decency, or Congruity; *Faloir* a Duty of Neceſſity.

On doit aimer ſon prochain. Vous deviez le traiter moins rigoureuſement. On devroit l'avoir prevenu. Vous

ne devriez pas negliger cette Affaire. Il me faut obéir. Il faut aimer Dieu. Il faut obéir aux Loix.

(35.) In many Cases one is not to answer with the same Verb he is ask'd. And 2. in the Regimen of Verbs, and other Words, false Regimens are carefully to be avoided; every Verb, and Word, must have its proper Regimen.

Est-il Malade? Answer, *Je crois qu'oui*, and not, Je crois qu'il est. *Avez-vous fait cela? Oüi Monsieur*, and not, J'ai. *Voulez-vous y aller? J'y irai*, and not, Je veux. 2. We must not say, *Il plût et charma le Prince. Le Prince* is here a false Regimen, because being govern'd by two Verbs, it is not in the Case which each of them requires. To give each their proper Regimen, we must say, *Il plût au Prince et le charma*, because *plaire* governs the Dative, and *charmer* the Accusative.

CHAP. V. *Of the Use of the Participles.*

(1.) THe Participle Active Present which always Ends in *Ant*, is *Unchangeable*, and so, of all Genders, and Numbers. It is commonly joyn'd to a Noun, that is the Nominative of a Verb.

Un homme connoissant. Une femme connoissant. Des Gens connoissant. Le Roi connoissant les desseins des Ennemis. La Reine connoissant leur perfidie. Des Theologiens connoissant la verité; we do not say, *Ce sont des Philosophe connoissant la verité*, because *Philosophes* is not here Nominative of the Verb; but we may say very well, *J'ai vû des Philosophes qui connoissant la verité, ne vouloient pas la dire*; because *connoissant* joyn'd with *Qui*, becomes the Nominative of *vouloient*.

(2.) The

(2.) The *Active* Participle, in order to denote a past Time, takes after it the *Passive*, and then it has the Signification of the Conjunctions *Après que, Puis que, Parce que, Dautant que, Dès que, Aussi tôt que, Comme,* or *Lors que.*

Aiant eu la satisfaction de vous voir, je ne desire plus rien. Le Roi de France ajant apris la defaite de ses Troupes. Etant arivé il alla immediatement à la Cour.

(3.) Sometimes it takes *En* before it, and then it becomes a Gerund, and then only marks a *Circumstance* of the Action, and has the Signification of *Lors que, Tandis que, Pendant que,* and *Comme.*

En revenant de la Campagne, j'eus une plaisante Rencontre. En marchant il me raconteit son Avanture. Je vous le dirai en allant. En soupant on se delasse.

(4.) The *English* Participle Present in an obliqne Case, is expres'd in *French* by the Indicative, with the Pronoun *Qui.*

La Peine d'une Personne qui enseigne. Cela convient à un homme qui etudie. J'ai rencontré en chemin une troupe qui chantoient et rioient.

(5.) There are several Active Participles which Use has render'd real Adjectives, and so declinable as *Charmant, Languissant, Dominant.*

Un sejour charmant. Une femme charmante. Un discours languissant. Une periode languissante. Une opinion dominante. Des sotises dominantes.

I have treated of the *Paſſive* Participles in the Article of *Orthography*, Page 25. and ſome following, ſo fully, even with regard to their *Syntax*, that any Thing I could ſay here would be but Repetition; and therefore refer to it. And proceed to the *Adverbs*, previouſly adviſing my Readers, to *joyn* the *Obſervations* I have already made upon them, the *Prepoſitions*, and *Conjunctions*, with the *Rules* I give here, concerning either of theſe Parts of *Speech*.

CHAP. VI. *Of the Uſe of Adverbs.*

(1.) THE *Adverb* is ordinarly plac'd after the *Simple Tenſes* of Verbs, and after the *Auxiliary* in the *Compound Tenſes*.

Il agit chretiennement. Elle ſe plaint de gayeté de Coeur, J'ai ſoigneuſement pratiqué. Je leur ai ſouvent dit.

(2.) If Two Adverbs meet in the ſame Phraſe, the Adverb of Time is plac'd firſt.

Je vous ai toujours bien dit. On les voit ſouvent enſemble. Avez-vous eté lang-tems ici?

(3.) Adverbs of Quantity take before them the indefinite Articles, *De*, and *A*, as well as Nouns.

C'eſt la pratique de beaucoup de Gens, ou *de Peu de Gens. Cela arrive à trop de Monde*, ou, *à Peu de Monde.*

(4.) *Beaucoup*, *Peu*, *un Peu*, take elegantly before them the Particle *De* in expreſſing a Compariſon.

Il eſt de beaucoup plus grand. Si vous me ſurpaſſez, c'eſt de de peu, ou d'un peu.

(5.) The Negative Adverb *Ne* is follow'd by ſome other Negative Term in the ſame Phraſe; ſuch as, *Pas, Point, Ni, Goute, Mot, Plus, Rien, Jamais, Perſone, Aucun, Nul, Nullement, Aucunement. Goute*, is never imployed, but after *Voir*, and *Mot* only after *Dire*; the others after all Sorts of Verbs.

Je ne parle pas. Je ne veux point. Je ne veux ni le voir, ni lui parler. Je n'en veux plus. Il ne vous demande rien. On ne l'auroit jamais cru. Il n'a été avec Perſonne. Il n'avoit aucun deſſein de vous nuire. Il n'a nulle envie de vous faire tort. Ne l'apprehendez nullement. Il ne le craignoit aucunement. Il ne voit goute. Je ne dis mot.

(6.) *Ne* always follows the Nominative, and its Dependencies, and muſt be imployed in all negative Propoſitions.

Dieu etant juſte ne commande point l'Impoſſible. Je ne dis rien. Vous n'avancez pas. Vous ne faites que badiner.

(7.) The other Negatives are plac'd after the ſimple Tenſes of Verbs, and after the Auxiliary in the Compound.

As in *Numb.* 5. And *Je n'ai point parlé. Je ne l'ai pas dit. Je n'ai jamai pretendu.*

(8.) *Pas* and *Point* are indifferently us'd for the moſt Part; but, *Point* denies more poſitively than *Pas.*

Je ne veux pas, I will not. *Je ne veux point*, I will not at all, *or* by no Means. *Elle n'a point de ſoin*, She's extremely careleſs.

(9.) When

(9.) When one answers negatively to a Question, we must use *Non*, *Point*, or *Point de tout*; and never *Pas* singly.

Avez-vous été? Non, or *Point*, or *Point du tout*. *Vont-ils aller? Non*, &c. *pas*, can't be us'd on these Occasions.

(10.) In a Question, *Point* only denotes a simple Interrogation; but, *Pas* supposes the Thing that is ask'd.

N'avez-vous point froid? N'avez-vous pas froid? The first is only a simple Question; but *Pas* supposes, that the Person ask'd, is cold.

(11.) *Pas* and *Point* are to be suppress'd in the following Cases. 1. Before the Negative *Ni* repeated. 2. after the Comparatives *Plus* and *Moins*; and the Pronouns, *Aucun*, *Nul* and *Autre*; and, 3. before the Particle *Que*, taken in the Sense of *If not*, or *But*, and after the Conjunctions, *à moins que*, or *Si*. 4. After *Que ne*, taken in the Sense of *Wherefore no*. 5. When *Ne* has *Qui* or *Que* before it, and the Conjunctive Mood after it. 6. After the Verb *Il y a*, follow'd by another in the Preterit; but, if it be follow'd by any other Tense, then *Pas* or *Point* are to be added. And 7. they are to be retrench'd in Sentences, where the Particle *De* signifies a *Portion of Time*. 8. After the Verbs, *Oser*, *Cesser*, *Pouvoir*, *Savoir*, and *Empêcher*. After Verbs of *Fear*, when we speak of an Event we don't wish for. In other Cases, *Pas* and *Point* are not to be omitted

omitted after Verbs of Fear. 9. *Pas* and *Point* are always to be suppress'd, whenever there is any other Negative after *Ne*.

1. *Je n'aime ni à donner ni à recevoir.* 2. *Il est plus sincere, qu'il ne faudroit. Il est moins riche qu'on ne croyez. Je ne trouve aucun,* ou *Nul sens dans cette Expression. Vous etes autre que je ne croyois.* 3. *Je ne veux d'autre Recompense que le plaisir de vous servir. A moins que vous n'ordoniez. Si vous ne vouliez.* 4. *Que ne parlez-vous? Que ne repondez-vous?* 5. *Est-il quelqu'un, qui ne le sache?* 6. *Il y a dix Ans que je ne l'ai vu. Il y a un mois que je ne lui parle point. Il y avoit un An que je ne la voyois pas. Je ne lui parlerai de ma Vie.* 8. *Je n'ose lui parler. Il a cessé de ne Tourmenter. Vous ne pouvez vous-contraindre. Je ne sai, qui vous etes. J'ai empêché qu'il ne fit mal; je ne crains qu'il me blesse.* But we must say, *Je crains que mes Remarques ne plaisent pas, à tout le Monde.* 9. *Je ne veux plus lui parler. Je ne veux jamais le voir. Je ne trouve Personne.*

(12.) *D'autant, Plus, Tant,* and *Tant s'en faut,* before an Adjective or Adverb of Comparison, are frequently plac'd before the Verb.

D'autant plus on est savant, d'autant mieux on doit se comporter. Plus on aura reçu, plus on aura à rendre Compte. Plus On est riche, plus On est fier. Tant plus vous le prierez, tant moins vous avancerez. Il l'a tout bû tant il l'a trouvé bon. Tant s'en faut, que je lui porte Envie.

(13.) There are some Adverbs plac'd after the Compound Tenses.

Il a combatu vaillament. Il s'est comporté prudemment. They are such Adverbs, as are form'd from Nouns, and end in *ment*.

(14.) Adverbs are ordinarly plac'd before Nouns;

Nouns; but, 1. if they are compos'd of ſeveral Words, they are plac'd both after Nouns and Verbs.

Veritablement Ami, Agreablement ſituée, Bien tourné. Fort malheureux. Plus Riche, Moins ſavant. 2. *Un homme à la mode. Mechant de gayeté de Coeur. Il eſt tombé à la renverſe. Il l'a fait de propos deliberé. Il a parlé à la volé.*

CHAP. VII. *Of the Uſe of the Prepoſitions.*

THEY are ſo call'd becauſe they always have a *Regimen*, and ſome govern the *Genitive*, ſome the *Dative*, and ſome the *Nominative* or *Accuſative*.

(1.) The Prepoſitions governing the Genitive, are thoſe compos'd of the Particles, *à*, *au*, *en*, and a Noun after them; as, *à Coté de*, *à l'egard de*, *à Couvert de*, *à l'abri de*, *à raiſon de*, *à la reſerve de*, *à l'inſçû de*, *au dela de*, *au dela de*, *au deſſus de*, *au deſſous de*, *au dehors de*, *au dedans de*, *au travers de*, *au peril de*, *Autour de*, *au milieu de*, *au lieu de*. And ſeveral other Subſtantives that take the Article of the Dative before them; as, *aux depens de*, *à la rencontre de*, *à l'honneur de*, *En depit de*, *en preſence de*, *en Arriere de*.

A coté de la Flandre, à l'egard de ſon Merite. A couvert de toute Inſulte. A l'abri des vents. A raiſon de trente ſols. A l'inſçû de ſon Pere. Au delà de la Mer, &c. *Aux depens de mon Dos. A la rencontre de l'Ennemi. A l'honneur de votre Connoiſſance. En depit de ſon opiniatreté. En preſence de toute la Cour. Au travers de la prairie.*

(2.) Alſo

(2.) Also *Independement de, Le long, Loin, Près, Auprès, Vis-a-vis, Proche, A cauſe, Arriere, Hors*, ſignifying without.

Independamment de ſon ſecours. Le long de ſes Joues Loin de nous. Près de moi. Auprès d'elle. Vis-a-vis de l'Egliſe. Proche du Tombeau. A cauſe de ſon Rang. Hors de la Ville.

(3.) *Conformément, Quant*, and *Jusque* govern the *Dative*. But before the Modificatives, that is, before Adverbs, Prepoſitions and Conjunctions, *Jusque* takes not the Particle *A*.

Conformément à vos Ordres. Quant à moi. Jusqu'à nos Jours. Jusqu' auprès. Jusque dans. Jusqu'ici. Juſques-là.

(4.) The Prepoſitions governing the Nominative, are *A*, by it ſelf. *Après D'après, A-travers, Dès, Avant, Avec, Chez, Contre, Dans, Outre, Depuis, En, Envers, Environ, Excepté, Hors*, ſignifying *Except*, *Hormis, Non obſtant*, but this is only plac'd before Names of Things. *Pendant, Pour, Sans, Sur, Sous, Vers, Selon, Veu, Attendu, Temoin, Moyennant, Touchant*. But theſe five laſt are not plac'd with Perſonal Pronouns.

A Paris. A la Campagne. A cent Francs. A bon marché. Après deux heures. D'après la Nature. A travers le Pays. Dès ſon Enfance. Avant le Jour, &c. Non obſtant ſa Repugnance. Veu le grand Nombre. Attendu la Recompenſe. Temoin les anciens Philoſophes. Moyennant une grande Somme. Touchant cette Affaire.

(5.) Several of theſe Prepoſitions are joyn'd with

with *Infinitives*, as with *Nouns*, and ſome may be plac'd after the Nouns they govern.

Avoir à faire à quelqu'un. Pour vous faire Plaiſir. Sans dire mot. Juſqu'a revoir. Quelque Tems après, A-ſon Humeur près.

(6.) *En* and *Dans* are ordinarily taken in the ſame Senſe, but *En* is plac'd before Nouns that have no Article, and *Dans* before thoſe that have. Yet we ſay, *Aller en l'autre Monde.* Either may be us'd before Pronouns that have no Article, but we ſay, *Penſer en moi meme*, and not *dans moi-meme.*

Aller en Caroſſe, not *dans Caroſſe. Il eſt dans la Maiſon*, not *en la Maiſon. Etre en bonne ſanté*, not *dans bonne ſanté. Etre en Robe de chambre*, not *dans.* We may ſay, *en* or *dans votre chambre.*

(7.) *En* before Nouns of Time denotes the Time one will take in doing a Thing; and *Dans* the Time at the End of which it is to be done.

Je le ferai en dix Jours. Dans huit Jours il le ſera.

(8.) *Dans* is alſo us'd to expreſs the Places wherein any Thing is ſhut up, or contain'd, or, 2. before Names of Cities, Proper Names, or Names of Authors cited.

Dans mon Cofre. Dans mon Porte-feuille. Dans Paris. Je l'ai vû dans Ciceron. Je l'ai lû dans St. Paul.

(9.) If a Prepoſition meets with an Adverb in the ſame Phraſe, it is to be plac'd after the Adverb, alſo after the Caſe of the Adverb, if there be any.

Il ne marche jamais à pied. Elle ne ſorte preſque pas de Nuit. Priez Dieu toujours dans la Proſperité, auſſi bien que dans l'Adverſité. Un honête homme n'abandone jamais ſes Amis, dans l'Adverſité.

(10.) When the Prepoſitions *Dans*, *Hors*, *Sur*, *Sous*, ſhould be preceded by any other Particle, Prepoſition or Conjunction; the Adverbs, that anſwer to their Signification, muſt be ſubſtituted in their Place.

We muſt not ſay, *Par dans la Maiſon*, *Par hors la ville*, *Par ſur la Tête*, *Par ſous les Bras*. But, *Par dedans la Maiſon*, *Par dehors la Ville*, *Par deſſus la Tête*, *Par deſſous les Bras*. We muſt alſo ſay, *Ni deſſus, ni deſſous, ni dehors, ni dedans, la maiſon*. And not, *Ni ſur, ſous, hors, and dans*. We ſay, *Il eſt tombé de deſſus une Table*; and not *De ſur*. *Elle eſt ſortie de deſſous une chaiſe*, and not *de ſous*.

CHAP. VIII. *The Uſe of the Conjunctions.*

(1.) *Si* Conjunction of Doubt, before an Imperfect Time, may take the Compound of the Uncertain Tenſe.

Si j'euſſe fait cela. S'il eut ſçû vos Deſſeins.

(2.) The Prepoſition *Si* taken in the Senſe of, *Suppoſe that*, is never follow'd by a Future, but by a Preſent, tho' it ſhould denote a Time to come. But 2. on other Occaſions, it takes the different Tenſes of the Verb.

Vous ſerez Content ſi vous venez Demain. 2. *Dites-moi ſi vous viendrez Demain. Je ne ſai pas ſi vous avez tenu votre parole.*

(3.) Inſtead of repeating *Si*, *Comme*, *Quand*, and

and others compounded of *Que*; ſuch as, *A fin que*, *Bien que*, *Lors que*, *Puis que*, *Pourveu que*, *Quoi que*, *Que* is imploy'd; and in that Caſe, it governs the Conjunctive.

Si vous m'aimez, et que vous vouliez me Perſuader Comme j'etois à l'Egliſe, et qu'on me vint dire. Quand je vous ai dit, et que je vous aye Aſſuré. Quoique vous ſoyez Robuſte, et que vous jouiſſez d'une parfaite Santé. Lors qu'nous fumes à Paris, et que l'Ambaſſadeur de Veniſe fit ſon Entrée publique.

(4.) *Si* taken in the Senſe of *Auſſi* is only uſed after a Negation, or in an Interrogation.

Elle n'a jamais paru ſi belle qu'à preſent. Son frere n'eſt pas ſi heureux que lui. Eſt-il ſi mechant qu'on le dit.

(5.) Conjunctions compounded with *Que* and *De*, ſuch as, *Avant que de*, *Amoins que de*, *Plutôt que de*, &c. or thoſe with *De* only; as, *à fin de*, *De peur de*, *Crainte de*, &c. are only repeated by *De*.

Avant que de manger et de boire, Amoins que de l'irriter, et de rompre tout à fait avec lui. Cetoit à fin de le Soulager, et de l'encourager.

(6.) *Que* after a Compariſon, and betwixt two Infinitives, will be follow'd by *De*.

Il vaut mieux ſe taire, que de parler mal à propos. Elle eſt plus ſage, que de parler de la Sorte.

(7.) The Conjunction *Mieux que*, between two Verbs, muſt have the Particle *Ne* before the Second Verb.

Il entend mieux qu'il ne parle. Il écrit mieux que vous ne penſez.

(8) The

(8.) The Conjunction *Et* is only to be plac'd before the laſt Subſtantive it connects. And when there are more than two Nouns connected, it may be omitted. But, in a figurative Diſcourſe, it may be plac'd before each of the Nouns.

L'Eſprit, la Science, et la Vertu, ſont les veritables biens de l'Homme. We may alſo ſay, *L'Eſprit, la Science, la Vertu, ſont les veritables biens de l'Homme.* In a figurative Senſe, we may ſay, *Il réünit en ſa Perſonne, et l'Eſprit, et la Science, et la Vertu*; &c.

(9.) When Two Verbs are joyn'd by *Et*, they may both govern the ſame Noun. But, if they are joyn'd by other Conjunctions, we muſt give the Noun to the firſt Verb for a Regimen, and to the Second, a relative Pronoun.

J'eſtime, et je reſpecte la Vertu. J'eſtime autant ſa Vertu, que je la reſpecte.

(10.) The Conjunction *Soit* is repeated before each of the connected Nouns. But, after uſing it once, *Ou* may be put in its Stead. *Ou* may alſo be repeated, but it is not neceſſary, it is enough, if it goes before the Second alternative Word.

Soit Reflection, ſoit Inſtinct, ſoit Hazard. Or, *Soit Reflection, ou Inſtinct, ou Hazard.* We may ſay, *C'eſt, ou Vous, ou Moi.* Or, *c'eſt vous, ou moi.*

(11.) *Ou bien* has the ſame Signification, but not ſo much us'd; it does much better between Sentences, than between Words of the ſame Sentence.

We muſt not ſay, *Il cherchoit mon Frere,* ou *bien moi.* But, we may ſay, *La choſe eſt ainſi,* ou *bien, l'On m'auroit trompé.*

(12.) The Comparative Conjunction *Auſſi* is more proper for Nouns than *Autant,* and this laſt is always us'd with Verbs.

Auſſi, Bon qu' Juſte. Auſſi Riche, que Sage. Je l'aime autant, que je l'eſtime. Elle a autant d'Eſprit, et de Beauté, que l'On puiſſe avoir.

Interjections are plac'd in *French,* as in *Engliſh,* and therefore contain no Difficulty.

Jusqu'ici Je me Suis apliqué à apprendre aux Jeunes Gens les Regles, et les Principes de la Grammaire, dans leur Langue Maternelle, et à leur faire Sentir la Pureté, et l'Elegance de la Langue Françoiſe. *Mais maintenant, comme j'eſpere que leur Eſprit eſt plus formé à cette Langue, et qu'ils ſont en Etat d'en profiter, j'ajouterai en* François, *quelques Regles touchant le Stile; et tacherai de leur donner une Idée de trois Genres, ou Caractéres d'Eloquence; pour leur faire ſentir l'Economie d'un Diſcours, les Beautés qui s'y trouvent, et les Defauts qui peuvent s'y rencontrer.*

Du STILE.

LE STILE en tant qu'il eſt diſtingué de la Syntaxe, *Eſt la maniere dont les mots conſtruits ſelon les Loix de la Syntaxe, ſont arangés entre eux; dans le gout de la Langue.*

Les Qualitez principales que la Grammaire exige dans le Stile ſont *La Clarté, La Facilité, La Vivacité, Le Nombre,* et *La Douceur.*

La Clarté eſt la Qualité la plus eſſentielle du Stile, puiſqu' On ne parle qu' à fin de ſe rendre intelligible. Pour y réuſſir il faut éviter toute ſorte d'obſcurité; Defaut où l' On peut tomber principalement en trois manieres, (1.) Uſant d'une Expreſſion qui ne forme aucun Sens. (2) D'une Expreſſion qui forme plus d' un Sens. (3.) D'une Expreſſion qui ne forme qu'un Sens, mais d'une maniére Embaraſſée.

(1.) L'Expression eſt cenſée ne former aucun Sens, quand On ne peut lui en atribuer, que par conjecture ou en devinant; ſans que l'Expreſſion par elle-même determine à concevoir ce qu'a voulu dire Celui qui parle, ou qui écrit. On tombe ſouvent dans ce Defaut pour vouloir être trop court. Quelquefois ſans que les Termes ſoient concis, ils ſont egalement obſcurs, parcequ'ils ſont joints avec d'autres Termes auxquels ils ne conviennent point. D'autrefois le mauvais Raport des parties d'une Phraſe la rend encore obſcure.

(2.) LE DEFAUT qui empêche le Discours de former aucun Sens, est beaucoup plus rare que celui où l'Expression forme plus d'un Sens. Ce dernier se rencontre toutes les fois qu'un Mot peut se raporter de lui-même, à plusieurs autres Mots. On tombe souvent dans ce Defaut en mettant les Adjectives à la fin de la Phrase. Mais pour l'éviter il faut les mettre immediatement après leurs Substantifs; ou bien, il faut avoir Soin que les Substantifs soient de divers Genres, et de divers Nombres, à fin que l'Adjectif qui conviendra à l'un ne puisse s'apliquer à l'autre.

LES AMBIGUETEZ les plus communes dans la langue Françoise sont celles qui produisent les Pronouns *Qui*, *Que*, &c. *Son*, *Sa*, *Ses*, &c. *Il*. Et les Particules *En* et *Y* qui ayant une Signification assez generale, peuvent se raporter à divers Mots dans une même Phrase; ou même à diverses Phrases dans une même Periode; à moins qu'on n'ait grand Soin de prevenir et d'ecarter les Equivoques qu'elles pouvoient causer.

J'AI deja marqué *Pag.* 236. de quel Usage pouvoit être le Pronoun *Lequel* par raport au *Qui*. Quand il ne suffit pas pour oter l'Equivoque il faut absolument en ces occasions changer entierement le tour de la Phrase, ou d'y inserer quelque Terme, dont le Sens par lui-même ôte tout Sujet de douter. Cette Pratique est importante, elle mettra à couvert du danger de faire un Discours géné et languissant, en cherchant trop Scrupuleusement à eviter l'Equivoque grammaticale.

(3.) IL se peut faire que l'Expression ne soit pas tout-a-fait Obscure, ni même Ambiguë; et cependant qu'elle manque encore de Néteté: C'est ce qui arive quand elle est Embaraſſée, et qu'il faut trop d'atention à demeler le Sens de la Phrase. Les Exemples en sont frequens, même parmi les Auteurs qui d'ailleurs écrivent bien.

LE

Le Stile Embaraſſé conſiſte dans un mauvais arangement des Mots d'une Phraſe, ou des Phraſes d'une même Periode. Quand l'Ecrivain a un Stile très net, C'eſt la Matiere Seule du Diſcours qui demande de l'Aplication; et l'Expreſſion n'en demande point: Au lieu que dans ces rencontres c'eſt moins le Sens qui fatigue, que la Suite des Mots; qui ne Sont, ni aſſez bien choiſis ni aſſez bien arangés.

Le Stile embaraſſé ſe trouve encore, dans des Phraſes, où certaines Expreſſions laiſſent entrevoir au commencement un Sens different de celui qu'elles ont en effet, et qui ſe decouvre à la fin de la Periode. Les Virgules ou les Accens pouroient, en quelque meſure, ôter l'Embaras en ces Occaſions; Mais autant qu'il ſe peut le Language doit, par lui-même, être Clair independamment de tout autre Secours.

L'Embaras du Stile ſe rencontre encore, quand le Regime d'une Phraſe pouroit Sembler apartenir à une autre. Il ſe trouve encore dans les Parentheſes, et les Periodes trop longues, dont la langue Françoiſe eſt tres-ennemie; Mais la Choſe eſt ſi evidente, et a été expoſée par tant d'Auteurs, qu'il n'eſt pas beſoin d'en parler plus.

Au reſte Nous ne finirions point, ſi nous voulions ſeulement, indiquer en combien de manieres On peut pecher contre la Clarté du Stile. Il ſuffit que nous ayons marqué les plus ordinaires, avec les moyens les plus generales de les eviter.

La Facilité du Stile ſupoſe la Clarté, mais de plus elle conſiſte à aranger les Mots, les uns après les autres, de la maniere la plus propre pour ſe preſenter naturellement à l'Imagination. La Facilité du Stile ſemble plus eſſentielle au François qu'a quelqu' autre Langue que ce ſoit. Car on obſerve qu'il arange communément les Mots dans le Diſcours, comme nos Idées s'a-

rangent par elles-même dans notre Eſprit, et conformément à l'Ordre géneral de la Grammaire, qui indique d'abord le Sujet dont On parle, puis ce qu'On en affirme, &c. C'eſt à dire le Nom et le Verbe. En François le Nom precede presque toujours le Verbe, et le Verbe ſuit le Nom. J'ai dit presque, parcequ'il ſe rencontre des Occaſions où le Nominative eſt après le Verbe; mais cela n'altere point l'Economie generale de la Langue.

Le Nom et le Verbe doivent être enoncés chacun avec leurs Modificatifs à leur Suite. Les Modificatifs du Nom Subſtantif ſont proprement les Adjectifs. Quelques uns doivent être neceſſairement mis avant, et d'autres après le Subſtantif. L'Uſage eſt difficile et peut-être bizare ſur ce point.

Les Noms, les Verbs, et les Modificatifs peuvent avoir chacun leur Regime, et ces regimes doivent être immediatement à la ſuite du Mot, dont ils ſont regis. Si un Mot a deux Regimes, il faut à parler en general, énoncer d'abord le Regime le plus court, par raport à ce qu'il eſt en Soi, et dans ſes Dependances; c'eſt à dire ſi le Regime le plus court de Soi, devient à raiſon de l'Adjectif qui y eſt atachè, ou de ſes autres Dependances le plus long, On le met le dernier. La Raiſon de cette Pratique eſt, que les Regimes doivent être les plus près qu'il ſe peut du Mot regiſſant. En effet l'Eſprit ne Soufriroit qu'à regret un ſecond Regime qu'il lui faudroit raporter avec quelque peine, au Mot dont il eſt regi, et qui en eſt eloigné: Au lieu qu'en propoſant d'abord le plus court Regime, il entend ſans peine commencer le Second, et quand le Second Regime eſt une fois commencé, l'Eſprit Soufre volontiers les Dependences qui y ſont atachées, pour developer le Sens de ce qu'on lui propoſe.

Quelle que ſoit cette Raiſon, l'Uſage ſemble exiger ce que nous avons dit. Et ſi les deux Regimes

ſont

ſont à peu près égaux, il faut conſulter ce qui doit être Naturellement attaché au Mot regiſſant: Ainſi le Regime abſolu par cette Raiſon doit ordinairement preceder le reſpectif. Du reſte, il faut prendre garde à ne point donner aux Regimes d'un Mot, des Dependances ſi longues qu'elles obſcurciſſent, ou ſuſpendent trop le Sens de la Phraſe.

Le Soin d'obſerver la clarté du Diſcours devroit auſſi faire changer quelque choſe à l'Arangement dont nous parlons. Ainſi pour eviter une Equivoque le plus court Regime devroit quelque fois être mis le dernier. Cette Regle touchant l'Arangement des divers Regimes d'un même Mot doit s'accommoder auſſi avec le Soin de menager les autres Qualités du Stile, ſelon qu'elles ſont plus ou moins importantes, de ſorte que la Clarté ſoit la premiere, enſuite la Facilité, puis la Vivacité, *&c.*

Bien que la Vivacité du Stile ſoit principalement attachée au Stile perſonel, la Grammaire donne une Regle generale et trés-juſte pour rendre le Stile auſſi vif qu'on puiſſe l'avoir ſelon ſon Genie. C'eſt d'Employer les Expreſſions les plus courtes pour exprimer ce qu'on veut dire. En effet la même Penſée qu'on Supoſeroit exprimée, d'une coté par une Phraſe conciſe, et d'une autre coté par une Phraſe defuſe, feroit d'une coté une Expreſſion vive, et de l'autre une Expreſſion moins vive, ou peut-être languiſſante. Si On en veut chercher la Raiſon. C'eſt qu'une Expreſſion plus courte ſatisfait d'avantage l'envie que nous avons naturellement de comprendre les choſes avec le moins de Peine et de Tems, qu'il eſt poſſible; D'ailleurs le Diſcours eſt l'Image de la Penſée; plus il eſt court, plus il tient de la Nature, et de la Perfection de la Penſée, qui ſe forme et ſe produit en un Inſtant.

Par là On peut decouvrir la Raiſon pourquoi des Ouvrages d'ailleurs Judicieux et Senſés ne laiſſent pas de nous ennuyer quand ils ne ſont pas écrits vivement. C'eſt,

que nous ſentons quelquefois même ſans y faire Reflexion, qu'ils nous ocupent plus de Tems qu'il ne faudroit, et nous en avons un ſecret Deplaiſir.

ON PEUT obſerver en particulier, que par tout où le Sens ne demande pas abſolument certaines Conjonctions, il eſt bon de les retrancher, car les Conjonctions trop frequentes ſont languiſſantes et peu neceſſaires; et tout ce qui eſt Superflu dans le Diſcours le rend lâche et ennuyeux. On pouroit ajouter que la vivacité du Stile conſiſte auſſi à choiſir des Termes qui donnent beaucoup à penſer: Mais par ces Reflexions nous paſſerions du reſſort de la Grammaire, à celui de la Rhetorique, et de la veritable Eloquence. Cependant, ſans Sortir du Stile Grammaticale, On peut obſervir que le Latin a plus de vivacité que le François, par la Seule Raiſon, que l'Expreſſion Latine ſera toujours plus courte que l'Expreſſion Françoiſe.

LE NOMBRE eſt une Qualité du Stile peut-être un peu arbitraire. On dit communément, qu'Elle conſiſte dans une Harmonie qui reſulte de l'Arangement des Mots, et qui eſt agréable a l'Oreille. Et l'On ſupoſe que cette Harmonie conſiſte dans un Nombre determiné de Silabes, dont les Phraſes et le Periodes doivent etre compoſées.

CE NOMBRE de Silabes ſe determine à peu près, (1.) Par raport à ce que l'On peut prononcer ſans forcer ſa Reſpiration, ou concevoir ſans trop S'apliquer. (2.) Par raport à une ſorte de convenance qui doit ſe trouver entre les parties d'une même Phraſe, ou d'une même Periode.

A L'EGARD du premier, le Latin eſt plus nombreux que le François; ſoit que les Romains euſſent plus de force que les François dans les Poumons, ou que la vivacité Françoiſe aura trouvé du Deſagrément, dans les

les Phraſes et les Periodes trop Longues; et qu'elles n'accommodoient pas ſon Impatience naturelle.

LE NOMBRE, par raport à une Sorte de Convenance entre les Mots conſiſte à donner à certaines parties de Phraſes, ou de Periodes qui ont plus de Relation l'Une avec l'Autre, à peu près un même Nombre de Silabes, et autant qu'il ſe peut, une même Conſtruction. Ces Parties ſont particulierement celles qui ſont liées par une Conjonction de Comparaiſon. Car ces Conjonctions faiſant comme une Balance entre deux Expreſſions, il faut autant qu'il eſt poſſible, ſans affectation et ſans contrainte, que les deux cotés de la Balance ſoient à peu prés égaux. L'Obſervation de cette Regle peut contribuer beaucoup à mettre de l'Agrément dans le Stile.

QUANT à ſa Douceur elle conſiſte à écrire de maniere que le Diſcours s'inſinuë imperceptiblement dans l'Eſprit du Lecteur, et y faſſe une Impreſſion qui plaiſe et qui atache. C'eſt le Souverain Talent d'un Ecrivain; Mais ce Talent regarde le Stile perſonel, et eſt fort au-deſſus du Grammatical, dont neanmoins il ſupoſe d'ordinaire la Pratique. A l'egard de ce dernier, ſa Douceur conſiſte principalement à ne laiſſer dans la ſuite des Mots rien de choquant ni de rude.

LA RUDESSE ſe rencontre toujours dans les Silabes qui ne peuvent ſe prononcer aiſément: Car le Lecteur les regardant comme lui etant propoſées à prononcer, il ſemble qu'il ſe trouve bleſſé, qu'On lui demande ce qu'il ne peut faire ſans peine.

AINSI il faut evirer une Suite de Mots où il entreroit beaucoup de Conſones ou de Diphtongues, Sur tout quand ce ſont de Letres fortes. Pleuſieurs Silabes de ſuite qui ont le même Son ou à peu près, cauſent auſſi de la Rudeſſe dans le Stile. En effét la Langue ſe laſſe de former, et l'Oreille d'entendre, un même Son pluſieurs fois de ſuite, comme le Bras ſe fatigue à faire

toujours

toujours un même Mouvement: Au lieu que ſans aucune peine il en feroit de ſuite Pleuſieurs diférens, parceque dans la varieté l'un delaſſe l'autre. Ainſi l'On donnera de la Douceur au Stile, en variant les ſons dont les Sylabes ſont formées, et particulierement en melant, ſans trop de contrainte, les Conſones avec les Voyéles.

Au Reste, quand les Sons ſemblables ne ſeroient tout-a-fait de ſuite, il y auroit encore de la Rudeſſe à en laiſſer pluſieurs dans la même Phraſe, parceque l'Eſprit aime naturellement la Varieté, eſt il eſt choqué du peu de Soin que l'On prend à contenter ſon Inclination naturelle: C'eſt pourquoi il eſt à propos de ne point repeter dans une même Phraſe, ou dans une même Periode, certaines Particules qui ſe preſentent frequemment; Comme, *Mais, Par, Pour, Avec, De, Du, A, &c.* Mais ſi la repetition de *Pour* eſt rude, etant joint à des Regimes differens, elle ne le ſeroit point, dans un même Regime: Car c'eſt alors que l'Eſprit aperçoit un juſte raport dans aplication qu'on fait, d'un même Mot, aux Objets qui lui convienent de la même maniere. Il ne ſeroit point choqué non plus de voir la repetition d'un mot, quand Elle eſt neceſſaire pour eviter quelque Ambiguité, qui ne ſe peut eviter autrement; car telle eſt ſon Equité naturelle, qu'il n'exige point l'Impoſſible, et que ſes autres Inclinations cedent toujours, á celle de concevoir nétement ce qu'On lui propoſe.

Le Stile ſe trouveroit auſſi trés rude s'il ſe recontroit des Mots, que l'Oreille ne diſtingueroit pas aſſez; de Sorte que pleuſieurs ne ſemblaſſent en former qu'un Seul. Car l'Oreille n'apercevant pas aſſez la Diſtinction de ces Mots, les ecoute comme n'en faiſant qu'un, et n'y etant pas accoutumée, Elle y trouve je ne ſai quoi de choquant ou de burleſque.

On ne peut diſconvenir que l'Arangement des Mots ne contribue beaucoup à la Beauté, et quelquefois même à la Force du Diſcours. Il y a dans l'Homme un gout naturel

naturel qui le rend ſenſible au Nombre, et à la Cadence. Et pour introduire dans les Langues, cette eſpece d'Harmonie et de Concert, il n'a falu qu'a conſulter la Nature, qu'etudier le Genie de ces Langues, que ſonder et interroger, pour ainſi dire, les Oreilles, que *Ciceron* apelle avec raiſon, Un Juge Fier et Dedaigneux. En effet, quelque belle que ſoit une Penſée en elle-même, ſi les Mots qui l'expriment ſont mal arangés, la delicateſſe de l'Oreille en eſt choquée, une Compoſition dure et rude la bleſſe, au lieu qu'elle eſt agréablement flatée de celle qui eſt douce et coulante. Si le Nombre eſt mal ſoutenu, et que la Chute en ſoit trop prompte, elle ſente qu'il y manque quelque choſe, et n'eſt point Satisfaite. Si au contraire il a quelque choſe de trainant et de ſuperflu, elle le rejette et ne le peut Soufrir. En un mot, Il n' y a qu'un Diſcours plein et Nombreux qui puiſſe la contenter.

Une Preuve que ce gout eſt Naturel, c'eſt qu'il eſt commun au Savant et à l'Ignorant: Avec cette Difference néanmoins, que le Premier en connoit les Raiſons, et que l'Autre n'en juge que par le Sentiment. Les Mots ſont dans la Main de l'Orateur comme une Cire molle et flexible, qu'il manie, qu'il tourne comme il veut, et à laquelle il fait prendre toutes les formes qu'il lui plait. Par la differente Structure qu'il leur donne, le Diſcours tantôt marche avec une Gravité Majeſtueuſe, ou coule avec une promte et legere rapidité; tantôt charme et enleve l'Auditeur, par une douce Harmonie, ou le pénétre d'Horreur, et de Saiſiſſement par une Cadence dure et âpre ſelon la difference des Sujets qu'il traite. Cet Arangement a une vertu merveilleuſe non ſeulement pour plaire, mais encore pour faire Impreſſion ſur les Eſprits. Car comme le remarque *Quintilien*, il n'eſt gueres poſſible qu'une choſe aille au Coeur, quand elle commence, par choquer l'Oreille qui en eſt comme le Veſtibule et l'Entrée. Au contraire l'Homme ecoute volontiers ce que lui plait, et il eſt conduit par le Plaiſir à croire ce qu'on lui dit.

Comme

Comme la Qualité et la Meſure des Mots ne dependent point de l'Orateur, et qu'il les trouve pour ainſi dire tout taillés. Son Habilité conſiſte à les mettre dans un tel Ordre, et à les aranger de telle ſorte, que leur Concours et leur Union, ſans laiſſer aucun Vuide, ni cauſer aucune Rudeſſe, rendent le Diſcours doux, coulant, agréable. Il n'eſt point de Mots quelques durs qu'ils paroiſſent par eux-mêmes, qui placés à propos, par une Main habile, ne puiſſent contribuer à l'Harmonie du Diſcours; Comme dans un Bariment le Pierres les plus brutes, et les plus irregulieres y trouvent leur Place.

Quoique le Nombre doive etre repandu dans tout le corps et le tiſſu de la Periode, et que ce ſoit de cette Union et de ce Concert, que reſulte l'Harmonie dont nous parlons: Cependant on convient, que c'eſt à la Fin ſur tout qu'il paroit, et qu'il ſe fait Sentir. Les Oreilles entrainées dans le reſte, par le continuité des Paroles comme par un Torrent, ne ſont en Etat de bien juger des Sons, que lorſque le cours rapide du Diſcours s'arêtant pour un Moment, leur laiſſe une eſpece d'entrepos. Auſſi eſt-ce en cet endroit que l'Admiration de l'Auditeur ſuſpenduë juſques là par un Plaiſir enchanteur, eclate tout-à-coup par des Cris et des Aplaudiſſemens. Le Commencement demande auſſi un Soin particulier, parceque l'Oreille y donnant une Attention toute nouvelle, en remarque aiſément les Defauts.

C'en eſt aſſés pour donner une Idée generale des Qualités du ſtile Grammatical et des Defauts qui y ſont opoſés. Paſſons aux trois Genres d'Eloquence.

De Trois DIFFERENS GENRES, ou CARACTERES d'ELOQUENCE.

COMME il y a trois Devoirs principaux de l'Orateur, qui ſont d'Inſtruire, de Plaire, et de Toucher; il y a auſſi trois Genres d'Eloquence qui y repondent, et qu'on apelle ordinairement, *le Genre Simple*, *le Genre Sublime*, et *le Genre Temperé*.

LE PREMIER paroit convenir plus particulierement à la Narration, et à la Preuve. Son Caractére principal eſt la Clarté, la Simplicité, la Preciſion. Il n'eſt pas ennemi des Ornemens, mais il n'en peut ſouffrir que de Simples, et rejette ceux qui ſentent l'Affection et le Fard. Ce n'eſt pas une Beauté vive et eclatante, mais douce et modeſte, accompagnée quelque fois d'une certaine negligence, qui en releve encore le Prix. La naïveté des Penſées, la pureté du Langage et je ne ſai quelle Elegance, qui ſe fait plus ſentir qu'elle ne paroit, en font tout l'Ornement. On n'y voit point ces Figures etudiées qui montrent l'Art à decouvert; et qui ſemblent enoncer que l'Orateur cherche à plaire. En un Mot, il en eſt de ce genre comme de ces Tables ſervies proprement et ſimplement, dont tous les Mets ſont d'un goût excellent, mais d'où l'On bannit tout Rafine-

Rafinement, toute Delicateſſe etudiée, tout Ragout recherché.

Il y a un autre Genre d'écrire, tout different du premier; Noble, Riche, Abondant, Magnifique; C'eſt ce qu'on apelle le GRAND, le SUBLIME. Il met en uſage tout ce que l'Eloquence a de plus relevé, de plus fort, de plus capable de fraper les Eſprits: La Nobleſſe des Penſées, la Richeſſe des Expreſſions, la Hardieſſe des Figures, la Vivacité des Mouvemens. C'eſt cette ſorte d'Eloquence qui dominoit autrefois ſoverainement à *Athenes* et à *Rome*, et que s'y etoit rendu Maitreſſe abſoluë des Deliberations publiques. C'eſt elle qui tonne qui foudroie, et qui ſemblable à une Fleuve rapide et impetueux, entraine et renverſe tout ce qui lui reſiſte.

Enfin il y a un troiſiéme Genre qui tient comme le milieu entre les deux autres: Qui n'a ni la ſimplicité du Premier, ni la Force du ſecond: Qui en aproche, mais ſans leur reſembler; Qui participe de l'un et de l'autre, ou pour parler plus juſte, qui s'en eloigne egalement. Il a plus de force et d'abondance que le premier, mais moins d'elevation que le ſecond. Il admet tous les Ornemens de l'Art, la Beauté des Figures, l'Eclat des Metaphores, le Brillant des Penſées l'Agrément des Digreſſions, l'Harmonie du Nombre et de la Cadence. Il coule doucement néanmoins, ſemblable a une belle Riviere, dont l'eau eſt claire et pure, et que de vertes Forêts ombragent de deux côtés.

Du GENRE SIMPLE.

De ces trois Genres d'écrire le premier, qui eſt *le Simple* n'eſt pas le plus facile, quoiqu'il le paroiſſe. Comme le Stile qu'on y employe eſt fort naturel, et qu'on s'ecarte peu, de la maniere commune de parler, On s'imagine qu'il ne faut pas beaucoup d'Habilité, ni de Genie, pour y reüſſir. Et quand on lit, ou, qu'on entend

entend un Discours de ce genre, les moins Eloquens se croyent capables de l'imiter. On le croit, mais on se trompe, et pour s'en convaincre, il ne faut qu'en faire l'Essai: Car après bien des efforts on sera contraint souvent, d'avouer qu'on n'a pas pû y parvenir. Ceux qui ont quelque gout de la vraie Eloquence, et qui sont le plus versés; reconnoissent qu'il n'y a rien de si difficile que de parler avec Justesse et Solidité, et cependant d'une maniere si simple, et si naturelle, que chacun se flate d'en pouvoir faire autant.

Ciceron dans son premier Livre de l'Orateur, fait remarquer que dans les autres Arts, ce qui est le plus excellent, est le plus eloigné de l'Intelligence et de la portée du vulgaire; au lieu qu'en Matiere d'Eloquence, c'est un Defaut essentiel de s'ecarter de la maniere ordinaire de parler. Il ne pretend pas par là, que le Stile de l'Orateur doive etre semblable à celui du Peuple, ou à celui qui regne dans les Conversations: Mais il veut, que l'Orateur evite avec Soin, les Expressions, les Tours, les Pensées, qui par trop de Refinement, ou par trop d'Elevation, rendroient le Discours Obscur, et Inintelligible. Comme il ne parle que pour se faire entendre, il est certain que le plus grand de tous les Defauts, où il puisse tomber est, de parler de telle Sorte, qu'on ne l'entende point. Ce qui distingue son Stile de celui de la Conversation, n'est point à proprement parler, la difference des Termes: Car ils sont, à peu de chose, les mêmes, de part et d'autre, soit pour le Langage ordinaire, soit pour le Discours le plus pompeux, il sont puisés dans la même Source: Mais l'Orateur sait par l'Usage qu'il en fait, et par l'Arangement qu'il leur donne, les tirer, pour ainsi dire, du commun, et leur prêter une Grace, et une Elegance toute particuliere; qui cependant est si naturelle, que chacun croiroit pouvoir facilement parler de la même Sorte.

Le

Le Stile Simple doit être employé quand on parle de choſes Simples et communes; et il convient ſur tout aux Recits, et au parties du Diſcours où l'Orateur ne ſonge qu' à inſtruire ſes Auditeurs, ou à s'inſinuer doucement dans leurs Eſprits. De là venoit cet Attention des Anciens à cacher l'Art, qui ceſſe en effet de l'être, s'il eſt viſible; bien diferente de l'Oſtentation et du Faſte de ces Ecrivains qui ne cherchent qu' a faire montre de leur Eſprit. De là certaine Negligences qui ne choquent point, et qui ne deplaiſent point, parcequ' elles marquent un Orateur plus occupé des Choſes que des Mots. De là enfin, cet air de Modeſtie et de Retenue, que les Anciens avoient ſoin Ordinairement de faire paroitre dans l'Exorde, et dans la Narration, pour le Stile, pour l'Expreſſion, pour les Penſées, pour le Ton même, et le Geſte. L'Orateur n'eſt pas encore admis dans les Eſprits. On l'obſerve avec Attention. Alors tout ce qui ſent l'Art, eſt ſuſpect à l'Auditeur; et le met en defiance, en lui faiſant craindre, qu'on ne veuille lui dreſſer des Embuches. Dans la ſuite il eſt moins ſur ſes gardes, et laiſſe plus de Liberté.

Ciceron remarque que *Demoſthene* a ſuivi cette Regle dans ſon beau Plaidoyer pour *Cteſiphon* où il parle d'abord d'un Ton doux et modeſte, et ne paſſe à ce Stile Vif et Vehement qui regne dans la ſuite, qu' après s'être inſinué peu à peu, et comme par degrés, dans les Eſprits; et s'en être rendu le Maitre. Il veut par la même raiſon, que l'On marque quelque Timidité en commençant: Et il releve dans *Craſſus* ce Caractère de Modeſtie et de Retenuë, qui bien loin de nuire à ſon Diſcours, rendoit l'Orateur même plus aimable, et plus eſtimable par l'Idée avantageuſe, qu'il donnoit de ſa Perſone.

Cette Regle, Que l'Exorde doit etre Simple et Modeſte n'eſt point generale, ni pour la Proſe, ni pour la

la Poesie. Il y a des Harangues dont le sujet soutre, et demande même, que l'Orateur commence d'un Air Noble et Grand, et le debut le plus sublime convient parfaitement à l'Ode, au lieu qu'il pourroit blesser ailleurs. Mais l'Eloquence dont il s'agit ici consiste dans une certaine Naïveté, et dans une Elegance qui plait extrêmement par cette raison-là même, qu'elle ne cherche point à plaire. Les Grecs lui donnent un Nom qui est fort Expressif c'est un Terme qui se dit d'un genre de vie Simple, Frugale, Modeste, Honête, sans Luxe, sans Faste, à qui rien ne manque, mais qui n'a rien aussi de Superflu. C'est à peu près ce qu'Horace apelle *simplex Munditiis:* une elegante Simplicité.

Du GENRE SUBLIME.

Le Sublime, le Merveilleux, est ce qui fait la grande et veritable Eloquence. *M. de la Mothe* le definit ainsi dans le Discours, qui est à la Tête de ses Odes: *Je crois*, dit-il, *que le Sublime n'est autre chose que le Vrai, et le Nouveau réünis dans une grande Idée, et exprimés avec Elegance et Precision.* Je ne sai pourtant si la derniere partie de cette Definition est bien juste: *Exprimés avec Elegance et Precision.* Ces deux Qualités sont-elles donc si Essentielles au Sublime, que sans elles il ne puisse Subsister? Je croyois que l'*Elegance*, bien loin de faire le Caractére propre du Sublime, souvent lui etoit opposée; et j'avoue que je n'en decouvre point dans les deux Exemples que cite *M. de la Mothe.* L'Un est de Moyse: *Dieu dit, que la Lumiere se fasse, et la Lumiere se fit.* L'Autre d'Homere: *Grand Dieu rends nous le Jour, et combats contre Nous.* Pour la *Precision*, ou *Brièveté*, elle convient quelque fois au Sublime lorsqu'il consiste dans une Pensée courte et vive, comme dans les deux Exemples precedens: Mais il me semble qu'elle n'en fait pas l'Essence. Il y a dans *Demosthene*, et dans *Ciceron*, beaucoup d'Endroits, fort etendus,

fort amplifiés, qui ſont pourtant trés-ſublimes quoique la Bréveté ne s'y rencontre point.

M. Despreaux dans ſes Reflections ſur Longin pretend, que par le ſublime ce Rhéteur n'entend pas ce que les Orateurs apellent le Stile ſublime: Mais *cet Extraordinaire, et ce Merveilleux qui frappe dans le Diſcours, et qui fait qu'un Ouvrage, enleve, ravit, tranſporte.* Le Stile ſublime, dit-il, veut toujours de grands Mots, mais le ſublime ſe peut trouver dans une ſeule Penſée, dans une ſeule figure, dans un ſeul tour de Paroles. Sans entrer dans l'Examen de cette Remarque qui ſoufre pluſieurs Difficultés je me contente d'avertir que par le ſublime j'entens ici *egalement et Celui qui à plus d'Etendue, et ſe trouve dans la ſuite du Diſcours; et Celui qui eſt plus court, et conſiſte en des Traits vifs et frapans.* Parceque dans l'une et dans l'autre Eſpece j'y trouve egalement une maniere de penſer, et de s'exprimer avec Nobleſſe et Grandeur, ce qui fait proprement le Sublime.

Le Stile ſimple dont j'ai d'abord parlé, quoique parfait dans ſon genre, et rempli de graces, ſouvent inimitables eſt bon pour inſtruire, pour prouver, et même pour plaire. Mais il ne produit point ces grands Effets, ſans leſquels *Ciceron* compte l'Eloquence pour rien. Comme ces Beautés ſimples et naturelles n'ont rien de Grand, et qu'On y voit un Orateur toujours tranquille, cette egalité de Stile n'echaufe, et ne remuë point l'Ame. Au lieu que le genre Sublime produit en nous une certaine Admiration melée d'Etonnement, et de Surpriſe; qui eſt toute autre choſe que de plaire ſeulement, ou de perſuader. Nous pouvons dire à l'egard de la Perſuaſion, que pour ordinaire, elle n'a ſur nous qu'autant de Puiſſance que nous voulons. Il n'en eſt pas ainſi du Sublime. Il donne au Diſcours une vigueur Noble, une Force invincible qui enleve l'Ame de quiconque nous ecoute. Par ce Ton de Majeſté, et de Grandeur, par ces Mouvemens Vifs et Animées par

cette Force et Vehemence qui y regnent, il enleve l'Auditeur, et le laisse comme abatu et ebloui, pour ainsi dire, de ses Tonneres, et de ses Eclairs.

C'est ce que *Quintilien* remarque, au Sujet d'un Endroit sublime et Eclatant du Plaidoyer de *Ciceron* pour *Cornelius Balbus* où il avoit inseré un Eloge magnifique du Grand *Pompée*. Il fut interrompu, non seulement par des Acclamations, mais même par des battemens des Mains extraordinaires; qui sembloient peu convenir à la Majesté du Lieu: Ce qui ne seroit point arivé, dit notre Rheteur s'il n'avoit eu en vûe que d'instruire les Juges, et s'il s'etoit contenté d'un Stile simple et elegant. Ce fut sans doute la Grandeur, la Pompe, et l'Eclat de son Eloquence, qui aracherent à tout son auditoire, ces Cris, et ces Aplaudissemens, qui ne furent point libres et volontaires, ni la suite des Reflexions; Mais l'Effet subit d'une espece de Ravissement et d'Enthousiasme, qui les enleva hors d'eux-mêmes, sans leur laisser le Tems de songer ni, à ce qu'ils faisoent, ni au Lieu où ils etoient.

Voila proprement la diférence qu'il y a entre les Effets du Genre Mediocre ou Orné, dont nous parlerons bien-tôt, et du Genre sublime. Celui-ci remuë, agite, eleve l'Ame au-dessus d'elle-même, et fait d'abord sur les Lecteurs, ou sur les Auditeurs une Impression à laquelle il est difficile, pour ne pas dire Impossible, de resister, et dont le souvenir dure, et ne s'efface qu'avec peine: Au lieu que le Stile commun et ordinaire, quoique rempli de Beautés et de Graces, ne touche, pour ainsi dire, que la Surface de l'Ame, et la laisse dans sa Situation tranquille et naturelle. En un mot, l'un plait et flate, et l'autre ravit et transporte. C'est ainsi que nous n'admirons pas naturellement de petits Ruisseaux, bien que l'Eau en soit claire et transparente, et utille même pour notre usage: Mais nous sommes veritable-

ment ſurpris quand nous regardons le *Danube*, le *Nil*, le *Rhin*, et l'Ocean ſur tout.

On Distingue pluſieurs ſortes du Sublime. Il n'eſt pas toujours vehement et impetueux. Le Stile de *Platon* ne laiſſe pas d'être elevé bien qu'il coule, ſans etre rapide, et ſans faire du bruit. *Demoſthene* eſt Grand, quoique ſerré, et concis; et *Ciceron* l'eſt, quoique diffus et etendu. On peut comparer *Demoſthene* à cauſe de la violence, de la Rapidité, de la Force, et de la vehemence avec laquelle il ravage, pour ainſi dire, et emporte tout, à une Tempête, et à un Foudre. Pour *Ciceron*, on peut dire, que comme un grand Embraſement, il devore et conſume tout ce qu'il rencontre avec un Feu qui ne s'eteint point, qu'il repand diverſement dans ſes Ouvrages, et qui à meſure qu'il s'avance prend toujours de nouvelles Forces. Au reſte, continuë *Longin* dans ſon admirable Traité du Sublime, qui tout ſeul ſeroit capable de former le gout des jeunes Gens, et dont je ne fais ici qu'en extraire quelques Reflexions; Le Sublime de *Demoſthene* vaut ſans doute bien mieux dans les Exagerations fortes, et dans les violentes Paſſions quand il faut, pour ainſi dire, etonner l'Auditeur. Au contraire l'Abondance eſt meilleure lorſque qu'on veut, ſi j'oſe me ſervir de ces termes, repandre une Roſée agréable dans les Eſprits.

Le vrai Sublime conſiſte dans une maniere de penſer Noble, Grand, Magnifique; et il ſupoſe, par conſequent, dans celui qui écrit ou qui parle un Eſprit qui n'ait rien de bas ni de rampant, mais qui ſoit au contraire rempli de hautes Idées, de Sentimens genereux, et de je ne ſai quelle noble Fierté qui ſe faſſe ſentir en tout. Cette elevation d'Eſprit, et de Stile, doit etre l'Image et l'Effet de la grandeur d'Ame. *Darius* offroit la Moitié de l'Aſie avec ſa Fille en mariage à *Alexandre*. *Pour moi* lui diſoit *Parmenion, ſi j'etois Alexandre j'accepterois ces Offres. Et moi auſſi* repliqua ce Prince *ſi j'etois Parmenion*

menion. N'eſt-il pas vrai qu'il faloit être *Alexandre* pour faire cette Reponce.

Si je raporterois d'autres Exemples de Penſées ſublimes cela paſſeroit les bornes que je me ſuis preſcrites; contentons nous d'ajouter que la Nobleſſe des Penſées entraine ordinairement après elle, celle de Paroles, qui à leur tour, ſervent beaucoup à relever les Penſées. Mais il faut bien ſe donner de garde de prendre pour le Sublime une aparence de Grandeur batie ordinairement ſur de grands Mots aſſemblés au hazard, et qui n'eſt, à la bien examiner qu'une vaine Enflure de Paroles, plus digne de mépris que d'admiration. En éfét l'enflure n'eſt pas moins vicieuſe dans le Diſcours que dans le Corps. Elle n'a que faux dehors, et une aparence trompeuſe: Mais au dedans elle eſt creuſe et vuide. Ce Defaut n'eſt pas facile à eviter. Car comme en toutes choſes naturallement nous cherchons le Grand, et que nous craignons ſur-tout d'être accuſés de ſechereſſe, ou de peu de Force, il arive, je ne ſai comment, que la plûpart tombent dans ce Vice, et on a de la peine à s'arêter où il faut, comme fait *Ciceron* qui au report de *Quintilien*, ne prend jamais un Vol trop haut; ou comme fait *Virgile*, qui eſt ſage juſques dans ſon Enthouſiaſme.

Les Figures ne ſont pas une des Moindres parties du Sublime, et ce ſont elles qui donnent le plus de Vivacité au Diſcours. Mais d'en entrer dans le Detail demanderoit un Ouvrage exprès et ne conviendroit pas a la bréveté qne je me ſuis d'abord propoſée, paſſons au troiſieme Genre d'Eloquence.

Du GENRE TEMPE'RE'.

Entre les deux Genres d'Eloquence dont nous avons parlé juſqu' ici, ſavoir le *Simple* et le *Sublime*, il y en a un troiſiéme, qui tient comme le milieu entre les

deux autres, et que nous pouvons apeller le *Genre Orné* et *Fleuri*; parceque c'eſt celui, où l'Eloquence etale ce qu'elle a de plus beau, et de plus brillant. Il nous reſte de faire ſur cette ſorte de Stile quelques reflexions qui aideront les jeunes Gens à diſcerner les Ornemens Solides, de ceux qui n'ont qu'un vain eclat.

On Apelle Ornement en matiere d'Eloquence, certains Tours, certaines Manieres, qui contribuent à rendre le Diſcours plus agréable, plus inſinuant, et même plus perſuaſif. L'Orateur ne parle pas ſeulement pour ſe faire entendre, auquel cas il ſuffiroit de dire les choſes d'une maniere toute Simple, pourvû qu'elle fut claire et intelligible. Son but principal eſt de convaincre et de toucher: A quoi il ne peut réüſſir, s'il ne trouve le moyen de plaire. Il veut aller à l'Eſprit et au Coeur: Mais il ne le peut faire, qu'en paſſant par l'Imagination, à laquelle il faut parler ſon Langage, qui eſt celui des Figures et des Images; parce qu'elle n'eſt frapée et remuée que par les choſes ſenſibles. C'eſt ce qui fait dire à *Quintilien* que le Plaiſir aide à la Perſuaſion, et que l'Auditeur eſt tout diſpoſé à croire vrai, ce qu'il a trouvé agréable. Il ne ſuffit donc pas que le Diſcours ſoit clair et intelligible, ni qu'il ſoit plein de Raiſons et de Penſées ſolides. L'Eloquence ajoute à cette Clarté et à cette Solidité, certain Agrément, certain Eclat: Et c'eſt ce qu'on apelle Ornement. Par là l'Orateur ſatisfait en même tems, l'Eſprit et l'Imagination. Il donne à l'Eſprit la Verité et la Solidité des Penſées et des Preuves, qui eſt comme ſa nourriture naturelle et il accorde à l'Imagination la Beauté, la Delicateſſe, l'Agrément des Expreſſions des Tours, qui ſont plus de ſon reſſort, et qui lui apartiennent plus particuliérement.

Il y a des Gens ennemis de tout Ornement du Diſcours, qui ne trouvent d'Eloquence naturelle, que celle dont le Stile ſimple et nud, reſſemble à celui de la Converſation; qui regardent comme ſuperflu tout ce qu'on

ajoute à la pure Neceſſité, et qui croyent que c'eſt deſhonorer la Verité que de lui prêter une parure etrangere; dont, ſelon eux, elle n'a pas beſoin, et qui ne peut que la defigurer. Si l'on n'avoit à parler que devant des Philoſophes, ou devant des Perſones exemtes de toute Paſſion, et de toute Prevention, peut-être ce Sentiment pourroit-il paroitre raiſonable. Mais il s'en faut bien que cela ne ſoit ainſi; et ſi l'Orateur ne ſavoit gagner ſes Auditeurs par le plaiſir, et les entrainer par une douce violence, la Juſtice et la Verité ſucomberoient ſouvent ſous les efforts des Méchans. C'eſt ce qu' autrefois *Rutilius* le plus juſte et le plus homme de bien qui fût à *Rome* éprouva dans le Jugement qui fut prononcé contre lui; parceque comme s'il eût été dans la Republique imaginaire de *Platon*, il ne voulut point qu'on employât d'autres armes pour ſa Defence, que celles de la ſimple Verité *Il n'en auroit pas été ainſi* dit *Antoine* à *Craſſus* dans un des Dialogues de *Ciceron*: *Si vous l'aviez defendu, non à la maniere des Philoſophes, mais à la votre: Et quelques corrumpus que fuſſent ſes Juges, votre Eloquente victorieuſe auroit ſurmonté leur mechanceté, et auroit arraché à leur Injuſtice, un Citoyen ſi digne d'être conſervé.*

C'eſt cette Habilité à orner et à embellir un Diſcours qui met la Difference entre un homme Diſert et un homme Eloquent. Le premier ſe contente de dire ſur une matiere ce qu'il en faut dire. Mais pour être veritablement Eloquent il en faut parler avec toutes les graces et tous les ornemens convenables. L'Homme diſert, c'eſt à dire, qui s'explique avec Clarté et Solidité, laiſſe ſon Auditeur froid et tranquille et n'excite point en lui ces Sentimens d'Admiration et de Surpriſe qui ſelon *Ciceron* ne peuvent être l'éfét que d'un Diſcours orné et enrichi de ce que l'Eloquence a de plus brillant, ſoit pour les Penſées, ſoit pour les Expreſſions.

Il y a un Genre d'Eloquence qui eſt uniquement pour l'Oſtentation, et qui n'a d'autre but, que le plaiſir de l'Auditeur, comme les *Diſcours Academiques*, les *Complimens* qu'on fait aux *Puiſſances*, certaines *Panegyriques*, et d'autres pieces ſemblables; où il eſt permis de deployer toutes les Richeſſes de l'Art, et d'en etaler toute la Pompe. Penſées ingenieuſes, Expreſſions trapantes, Tours et Figures agréables Metaphores hardies, Arangement nombreux et periodique; En un mot, tout ce que l'Art a de plus magnifique et de plus brillant, l'Orateur peut non ſeulement le montrer, mais même en quelque ſorte, en faire parade; pour remplir l'attente d'un Auditeur qui n'eſt venu que pour entendre un beau Diſcours, et dont il ne peut enlever les Sufrages, qu'a force d'Elegance et de Beautés.

Il eſt pourtant neceſſaire, même dans ce Genre que les Ornemens ſoient diſpenſés avec une ſorte de Sobrieté et de Sageſſe; et l'on doit ſur-tout y jetter une grande Varié é. *Ciceron* inſiſte beaucoup ſur ce Principe, comme ſur une des regles de l'Eloquence les plus importantes. *Il faut*, dit-il, *choiſir un genre d'écrire, qui ſoit agréable, et qui plaiſe à l'Auditeur; de ſarte neanmoins que cet Agrément et ce Plaiſir ne viennent point enfin à lui cauſer du Dégout. Car c'eſt l'effet que produiſent ordinairement les choſes qui frapent d'abord les Sens, par un vif Sentiment de plaiſir, ſans qu'on en puiſſe rendre la Raiſon.*

Il en aporte pluſieurs exemples tirés de la Peinture, de la Muſique, des Odeurs, des Liqueurs, des Viandes; et après avoir etabli ce Principe, que le degout et le raſſaiſiement ſuivent de près les grands Plaiſirs; et que c'eſt ce qu'il y a de plus doux, qui devient le plutôt fade et inſipide. Il en conclut qu'il n'eſt pas etonant que, ſoit en proſe, ſoit en vers, un Ouvrage quelque grace et quelque elegance qu'il ait d'ailleurs, s'il eſt trop uniforme, et toujours ſur le même ton, ne ſe faſſe pas long tems gouter. Un Diſcours qui eſt par tout

ajuſté

ajuſté et peigné ſans Melange et ſans Variété, où tout frape, tout brille; un tel Diſcours cauſe plutôt une eſpece d'eblouiſſement, qu'une veritable Admiration: Il laſſe et il fatigue par trop de Beautés, et il deplait à la longue, à force de plaire. Il faut dans l'Eloquence comme dans la Peinture des Ombres pour donner du relief, et tout ne doit être Lumiere.

Si cela eſt vrai, même dans ces ſortes de Diſcours qui ne ſont que pour l'Aparat et pour la Ceremonie, combien plus ce Precepte doit-il être obſervé dans ceux, où l'on traite d'affaires ſerieuſes et importantes, telles que ſont celles, dont ſe charge l'Eloquence de la Chaire et du Bareau? Quand il s'agit des biens, du repos, de l'honeur des Familles, et, ce qui eſt bien plus conſiderable, du Salut Eternel; eſt-il permis à un Orateur de s'occuper du ſoin de ſa Reputation, et de chercher à faire paroitre de l'Eſprit? Ce n'eſt pas qu'on pretende banir de ces Diſcours, les graces et la beauté du Stile. Mais les Ornemens qu'il eſt permis d'y employer doivent être plus graves, plus modeſtes, plus ſeveres, et partir plutôt du fonds de la Matiere même, que du Genie de l'Orateur. Il faut une Eloquence dont la Parure ſoit mâle, noble, et chaſte; et ennemie de tout fard, et de toute affé erie; qui brille pourtant, mais de Santé, s'il faut ainſi dire, et qui ne doive ſa Beauté qu'à ſes Forces. Car il en doit être du Diſcours, comme du Corps humain qui tire ſes veritables Agrémens de ſa bonne conſtitution: Au lieu que le fard et l'artifice ne ſervent qu'à gater le Viſage par le ſoin même, que l'on prend pour l'embellir.

C'Est un grand Principe, qui ſe verifie egalement dans les Ouvrages de la Nature et dans ceux de l'Art, que les choſes qui ont plus d'Utilité en elles-mêmes, ont auſſi pour l'ordinaire plus de Dignité et de Grace. Qu'on faſſe quelque attention ſur la Symetrie, et ſur l'Arangement des differentes parties qui compoſent un

Edifice,

Edifice, ou un Vaiſſeau, qui entrent dans la Structure du Corps Humain, qui forment dans l'Univers cette Harmonie qu'on ne ſe laſſe point d'y admirer; on reconnoitra que chacune de ces Parties dont l'Utilité ſeule, ou la Neceſſité ſembleroit faire naître l'Idée, contribuë auſſi beaucoup, à la Beauté du Tout. Il en eſt ainſi du Diſcours. Ce qui en fait la Force, en fait auſſi l'Agrément; et jamais la vrai Beauté n'eſt ſeparée de l'Utilité.

Ce Principe peut beaucoup ſervir pour diſtinguer les Ornemens vrais et naturels, de ceux qui ſont faux et etrangers: Il n'y a qu'à examiner s'ils ſont utiles et neceſſaires au Sujet que l'on traite. Il y a un Stile ebloüiſſant, qui impoſe par le vain eclat de l'Expreſſion, ou qui court ſans ceſſe après de petites penſées froides et pueriles, ou qui eſt toujours monté ſur des echaſſes, ou qui s'egare en des Lieux communes vuides de ſens, ou qui brille de je ne ſai quelles petites fleurs qui tombent dès qu'on vient à les ſecouer, ou qui ſe guinde enfin jusqu'aux Nuës pour atraper le Sublime. Tout cela n'eſt point vraie Eloquence, mais vaine et ridicule Parure: Et pour le bien faire ſentir aux jeunes Gens, il faut les rendre extremément atentifs, à cette exacte ſeverité des bons Ecrivains ſoit Anciens, ſoit Modernes, qui ne ſortent point de leur Sujet, et n'outrent rien. Car ces fauſſes Graces, et ces fauſſes Beautés diſparoiſſent, quand on leur en oppoſe de ſolides.

Je dirois volontiers des Graces du *Stile Fleuri* par raport aux Beautés d'un Stile plus ſolide et plus mâle ce qui *Pline* remarque des Fleurs, en les comparant aux Arbres. *La Nature*, dit-il, *ſemble avoir voulu ſe jouer, et comme s'egayer dans cette varieté de Fleurs dont elle orne les Champs et les Jardins: Varieté incomprehenſible, et que nulle Deſcription ne peut exprimer; parceque la Nature eſt bien plus habile à peindre, que l'Homme à parler. Mais comme elle ne produit les Fleurs que pour le plaiſir*

auſſi

auſſi ne leur donne-t-elle ſouvent pour durée, que le court eſpace d'un Jour. Au lieu que pour les Arbres deſtinées pour la Nouriture de l'Homme, et aux uſages de la Vie, elle leur accorde pluſieurs Années, et quelquefois des Siécles entiers; ſans doute pour nous avertir, que ce qui eſt fort brillant, paſſe bien vite, et perd bientôt ſa Vivacité et ſon Eclat. Il eſt aiſée de faire l'Aplication de cette Penſée aux beautés du Stile dont nous parlons ici, aux quelles on ſait que les Orateurs donnent ordinairement le nom de *Fleurs.*

REFLEXIONS generales ſur les trois GENRES d'ELOQUENCE.

IL ſeroit inutile d'examiner, lequel de ces trois Genres d'Eloquence convient le mieux à l'Orateur, puiſqu' il doit les embraſſer tous; et que ſon habilité conſiſte à ſavoir les employer à propos ſelon la difference des Matieres qu'il traite, de ſorte qu'il puiſſe les temperer l'un par l'autre, et meler egalement tantôt la Force à la Douceur, et tantôt la Douceur à la Force. D'ailleurs ces trois Genres, dans la diverſité de Stiles qui les diſtingue, ont pourtant quelque choſe du commun, qui les réunit ſavoir, un certain gout de Beauté ſolide et naturelle, ennemie de tout fard, et de toute affectation.

MAIS je ne puis m'empêcher de remarquer que cette Eloquence fleurie, et brillante, qui, pour ainſi dire, petille par tout d'eſprit, qui prodigue ſans meſure, les Graces, et les Beautés, dont on fait pour l'ordinaire tant de Cas, à laquelle on donne aſſez ſouvent la preference ſur toutes les autres, qui paroit ſi fort du goût de notre Siécle, et qui etoit preſque inconnuë aux bons Ecrivains d'Antiquité, eſt pourtant d'un très-mediocre Uſage, et renfermée dans des bornes très-etroites. Cette ſorte d'Eloquence n'eſt point celle qui convient, ou à

la Chaire, ou au Barreau. Elle n'eſt pas propre non plus, pour les écrits de Piété et de Morale, pour les Livres de Controverſe, pour les Diſſertations ſavantes, les Refutations, les Apologies, ni pour une infinité de pareils Ouvrages de Literature. L'Hiſtoire qui doit être écrite naturellement, ne s'accomoderoit pas d'un Stile ſi affecté, et il paroitroit encore plus inſuportable dans les Lettres, dont la Simplicité fait le principale Caractére. A quoi ſe trouvera donc reduite cette Eloquence ſi vantée? Je laiſſe au Lecteur le ſoin de parcourir les endroits, et les occaſions, où elle peut être raiſonablement admiſe, et de juger ſi elle merite tous nos Soins, et toute notre Eſtime.

Ce n'eſt pas que tous ces autres Ouvrages ſoient ennemis de l'Ornement. *Ciceron* en eſt une grande preuve et il peut ſeul, nous ſuffire pour nous former dans tous les Genres d'Eloquence. Ses Lettres peuvent nous donner une juſte Idée du Stile Epiſtolaire. Il y en a de pur Compliment, de Recommendation, de Remercîment, de Louange. Quelques-unes ſont gaïes et enjouées, où il badine avec Eſprit: D'autres graves et ſerieuſes où il examine des Queſtions importantes: dans des autres il traite des Affaires publiques; et celles-là ne ſont pas les moins belles. Ses Traités de Rhetorique et de Philoſophie ſont des chef-d'oeuvres dans leur genre; et les derniers montrent, comment les matieres les plus ſubtiles, et les plus epineuſes peuvent être traitées avec Elegance et Delicateſſe. Pour les Harangues, elles renferment tous les Genres d'Eloquence, toutes les differentes ſortes de Stiles, le *Simple*, l'*Orné*, le *Sublime*.

Que dirai-je des Auteurs Grecs? Le Caractére propre d'*Homere* n'eſt-ce pas d'exceller egalement dans les petites, et dans les grandes Choſes, et de joindre à une Sublimité merveilleuſe, une Simplicité qui n'eſt pas moins admirable? Y a-t-il un Stile plus delicat, plus elegant, plus nombreux, plus élévé que celui de *Platon*? Eſt-ce

ſans

ſans raiſon que parmi cette foule d'Orateurs qui parurent en même-tems à *Athenes*, *Demoſthene* a eu le premier Rang, et a été regardé preſque comme la regle de l'Eloquence? Enfin pour ne point parler de tous les anciens Hiſtoriens eſt-il un homme ſenſé qui ſe laſſe de la Lecture de *Plutarque*? Or de tous ces Auteurs ſi anciennement, et ſi generalement eſtimés, y en a-t-il un Seul qui ait donné dans ce gout de Pointes, de Penſées brillantes, de Figures recherchées, des Beautés entaſſées les unes ſur les autres? Et combien ce Stile qui eſt banni de preſque tous les Diſcours Serieux, doit-il paroitre quelque choſe de petit, de mince, de puerile, en comparaiſon de cette noble Simplicité, ou de cette ſage Grandeur qui ſont le Caractére de tous les bons Ouvrages, et qui ſont d'uſage pour toutes les Matieres, pour tous les Tems, et pour toutes les Conditions.

Mais pour en juger ainſi, il ne faut que conſulter la Nature. On ne peut nier que, ces Jardins ſi peignés, ſi ajuſtés, ſi enrichis de tout ce que l'Art a de plus eclatant; ces Caſcades, ces Boſquets, n'ayent beaucoup d'Agrément. Mais oſeroit-on comparer tout cela au magnifique Spectacle que preſente une belle Campagne, où l'on ne ſait ce qu'on doit le plus admirer: Ou le cours tranquille d'une Fleuve qui roule ſes eaux avec Majeſté, ou ces longues et agréables Priairies que les nombreux troupeaux qui y paiſſent ſans ceſſe rendent comme vivantes et animées; ou ces gazons naturelles qui ſemblent inviter au repos, et dont l'eclatante verdure n'eſt point ternie par des ouvrages de marbre; ou ces riches Coteaux ſi merveilleuſement diverſifiés par des Maiſons, des Arbres, des Vignes, et encore plus par un Champêtre inculte; ou ces hautes Montagnes qui ſemblent ſe perdre dans les nuës; ou enfin ces grandes Forêts dont les Arbres, preſque auſſi anciens que le Monde, qui ne doivent leur Beauté, qu'a celui qui en eſt le Créateur? Voila ce qu'eſt le Stile le plus fleuri auprès de la Grande et Sublime Eloquence.

A TABLE of the *Matters* contain'd in this BOOK.

PART I.

THE *Introduction.* Page 1.

CHAP. I. *Of Pronunciation.* 2.

II. *Of Orthography.* 19

§ 1. *Of the* French *Way of ſpelling.* 21

§ 2. *Of the Old Orthography.* ib.

§ 3. *Of the New Orthography.* ib.

§ 4. *Of the Orthography of Participles Paſſive.* 24

§ 5. *Of the Orthography of Adverbs, Prepoſitions, Conjunctions and Interjections.* 32

§ 6. *Obſervations on the Orthography of ſome Words, &c.* 33

PART II.

Of Proſody. 42

§ 1. *Of Eliſion and Inſertion.* 44

§ 2. *Of Accents.* ib.

PART III.

Of the Parts of Speech. 45

CHAP. I. *Of the Articles.* 46

CHAP. II. *Of Nouns.* 57

§ 1. *Of Gender.* 58

§ 2. *Of Number.* 67

§ 3. *Of the Caſe.* 68

§ 4. *Of Figure.* 69

§ 5. *Of Forming.* 70

§ 6. *Of*



INDEX

§ 6. *Of Comparison.* Page 72
§ 7. *Of Declension.* 76
CHAP. III. *Of Pronouns.* 80
§ 1. *Of Personal Pronouns.* 81
§ 2. *Of Possessive Pronouns.* 82
§ 3. *Of Absolute Pronouns.* 83
§ 4. *Of Demonstrative Pronouns.* ib.
§ 5. *Of Relative and Interrogative Pronouns.* 84
§ 6. *Of the Indefinite Pronouns.* 85
CHAP. IV. *Of Verbs.* 86
Of the different Kinds of Verbs. 88
Of Moods. ib.
Of Tenses. 89
Of Persons. 92
Of Figure. 93
Of Formation. ib.
The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verbs. 103
The 1st *Conjugation of Regular Verbs.* 109
The 2d. 113
The 3d. 118
The 4th. 121
§ 1. *Of Passive Verbs.* 127
§ 2. *Of Neutral Verbs.* 129
§ 3 *Of Reciprocal Verbs.* 131
Of the Conjugation of Verbs in a Negative and Affirmative Sense, and with the Participle EN *and* Y. 136
Of Irregular Verbs. 140
Of Impersonal Verbs. 160
CHAP. V. *Of Participles.* 164
CHAP. VI. *Of Adverbs.* 168
CHAP. VII. *Of Prepositions.* 175
§ *Observations on the Adverbs and Prepositions.* 177
CHAP. VIII. *Of Conjunctions.* 180
§ 1. *Of the Conjunction* QUE. 193
§ 2. *General Observations on the Conjunctions.* 196

CHAP.

INDEX.

CHAP. IX. *Of Interjections.* Page 200
§. *Of the Use of several Particles.* 201
The different Uses of the Verb FAIRE. 205

PART IV.

The Syntax. 209
Of the Concords in General. 211
CHAP. I. *Of the Use of the Articles.* 212
CHAP. II. *Of the Use of Nouns.* 215
CHAP. III. *Of the Use of Pronouns.* 224
§ 1. *Of the Supplying Pronouns.* 228
§ 2. *Of the Possessive Pronouns.* 230
§ 3. *Of the Demonstrative Pronouns.* 232
§ 4. *Of the Relative Pronouns.* 234
§ 5. *Of the Indefinite Pronouns.* 238
CHAP. IV. *Of the Use of Verbs.* 242
§ 1. *Of the Use of Moods.* Ibid.
§ 2. *Of the Use of Tenses.* 247
§ 3. *The Syntax of Verbs.* 251
CHAP. V. *Of the Use of Participles.* 262
CHAP. VI. *Of the Use of Adverbs.* 264
CHAP. VII. *Of the Use of Prepositions.* 268
CHAP. VIII. *Of the Use of Conjunctions.* 271
Of Interjections. 274
Du Stile. 275
De trois Genres d'Eloquence. 285
Du Genre Simple. 286
Du Genre Sublime. 289
Du Genre Tempéré. 293
Observations Generales sur ces trois Genres d'Eloquence. 295

The END.

BRITISH MUSEUM 15 FEB 68